

Breaking News!

Humanity's Lost History



Gobekli Tepe is a 12,000-year-old site, who built it?



Foundation Stones, Baalbek Lebanon

**Based on The Urantia Book
By William Lucas**

Breaking News! Humanity Lost History

Copyright 2017 revised 2019

This work uses quotations from the the-English-language translation of The Urantia Book published by Urantia Foundation, © 1955 Urantia Foundation, 533 Diversey Parkway, Chicago, Illinois 60614, USA; +1 (773) 525-3319; <https://www.urantia.org>; all rights reserved. The views expressed in this work are those of the author and do not necessarily represent the views of the Urantia Foundation or its affiliates.

By William Lucas

Dedication

When I first read the entire Urantia book in 1997, I was amazed and shocked this type of knowledge was on our planet, and so few people knew about it. I've been searching for this knowledge all my adult life. At the time I found *The Urantia Book*, I was 60 years old.

After reading the book, I could not live in peace without sharing this information with my fellow humans. I had no previous training as a writer, so I had to teach myself how to write; it took me years to understand the basics of *The Urantia Book*, 2,097 pages enough to write about. After self-publishing two books, I dedicate this book, *Breaking News! Humanity Lost History* to the seekers of the world who have the understanding if we fulfill God's plan for our life, we can create a beautiful world.

Acknowledgment

. I am grateful to Bobbie Dreier of The Urantia Fellowship for her work in proofreading my first manuscript on The Urantia Book. I had no formal training as a writer; you can imagine all the problems she had. After many years I want her to see that the book has grown up.

And I am grateful to my sister Dolores for her support and encouragement even though the subject of my book is a difficult one, and I would also like to thank her daughters for their support. I am also grateful to my cousin Kathy for her kindness and willingness to listen, mainly when there were so few people with whom I could converse and share.

My blessing goes out to Unity Christ of Bon Air, UCBA of Richmond, Virginia with special thanks to Reverend Joyce Fisher Pierce, there are no requirements in the Church to follow any doctrines as long as you are searching for the truth, you love God with all your heart and soul and seek to do his will. Now that is something I can accept. Also, I am grateful to Cheryll Weis and Jan Haddon of UCBA for their encouragement and friendship.

Introduction	
The Bible And The Urantia Book	8
Chapter 1: And There Was Light	10
The Paradise Creator Sons	10
The Distortion of the Bible	11
The Dawn of Life	13
The Dawn of Man	15
The Primates	16
The First Human Beings	17
Evolution of the Human Mind	18
Recognition as an Inhabited World	20
The Survival of Andon and Fonta	24
Life After Death	25
Sleeping Survivors	27
Paradise Arrival	27
Chapter 2: When Higher Beings Came to Earth	29
Origin of the Color Race	30
Urantia's Planetary Prince, Caligastia	34
The Caligastia 100	34
Seraphic Transporters	34
The Dalamatian Civilization	37
Misfortunes of Caligastia	43
Chapter 3: The Lucifer Rebellion	45
Lucifer's Manifesto	45
The Seven Crucial Years	47
The Caligastia 100 after the Rebellion	48
The Struggle to Civilization	50
Factors in Social Progression	51
Evolution of Cultural	54
Chapter 4: Midwayers and the Land of Nod	56
The Tower of Babel	57
The Nodites Center of Civilization	62
Chapter 5: The Garden of Eden	65
The Garden Site	66
Establishing the Garden	67
The Garden Home	67
The Tree of Life	68
Adam and Eve	68
The arrival of Adam and Eve	70
The Resurrection of the Sleeping Survivors	71
Isolated on a Quarantined Planet	71

Home Life of Adam and Eve.....	74
The Legend of Creation.....	76
The Default of Adam and Eve.....	77
Caligastia's (the devil) Plot.....	77
The Temptation of Eve.....	78
Consequences of Eve's Decision.....	79
Chapter 6: The Second Garden.....	83
Cain and Abel.....	83
Life in Mesopotamia.....	85
Death of Adam and Eve.....	86
Survival of Adam and Eve.....	87
The Mansion Worlds.....	89
Mansion World Number One.....	90
Mansion World Number Two.....	91
Mansion World Number Three.....	91
Mansion World Number Four.....	92
Mansion World Number Five.....	92
Mansion World Number Six.....	93
Mansion World Number Seven.....	93
Jerusem Citizenship.....	95
Ascending Mortals.....	95
Chapter 7: Adamson and Ratta.....	96
Racial and Culture Distribution.....	97
The Sumerians, Last of the Andites (Aryans).....	113
Chapter 8: Machiventa Melchizedek.....	107
The Sage of Salem.....	108
The Salem Religion.....	110
The Selecting of Abraham.....	110
The Melchizedek Covenant with Abraham.....	111
The Departure of Melchizedek.....	112
Chapter 9: Yahweh God of the Hebrews.....	115
Deity Concept Among the Semites.....	115
The Matchless Moses.....	117
The Proclamation of Yahweh.....	118
The Teaching of Moses.....	119
Chapter 10: Jesus the Christ.....	123
Previous Bestowals of Christ Michael.....	124
Sacrificial Lamb.....	126
John the Baptist.....	127
John Becomes a Nazarite.....	128
The Baptism of Jesus.....	128
The Forty Days.....	130
The Heart of the People.....	132
The Analysis of Jonah.....	133

The Discourse on True Religion.....	136
The Second Discourse on True Religion.....	138
Chapter 11: The Wedding at Cana.....	141
God's Wrath.....	142
Purpose of Affliction.....	143
Resurrection of Lazarus.....	144
What Became of Lazarus.....	145
 Chapter 12: The Last Days of Jesus.....	 146
Early Home Life.....	146
Judas and the Chief Priest.....	148
After the Noontime Meal.....	149
On The Way to the Last Supper.....	150
Beginning the Supper.....	150
Washing the Apostles Feet.....	151
The Last Word to the Betrayer.....	153
Establishing the Remembrance Supper.....	153
In Gethsemane.....	153
The Last Group Pray.....	154
Alone in Gethsemane.....	155
The Betrayal and Arrest of Jesus.....	156
The Father's Will.....	156
On The Way to the High Priest Palace.....	158
Examination by Annas.....	159
Peter in the Courtyard the Court.....	160
Before the Sanhedrin Court.....	161
The Hour of Humiliation.....	162
Second Meeting of the Court.....	163
The Private Examination by Pilate.....	164
Jesus before Herod.....	165
Pilate Last Appeal.....	167
Pilate's Last Interview.....	167
Pilate's Tragic Surrender.....	168
Just Before the Crucifixion.....	168
The End of Judas Iscariot.....	169
 Chapter 13: The Burial of Jesus.....	 170
Meaning of Death on the Cross.....	172
The Morontia Transit.....	173
 Chapter 14: The God Within.....	 175
The Origin and Nature of the God Within.....	175
The Mission of the Thought Adjusters.....	177
The Adjuster and Human Will.....	180
The Seven Psychic Circles.....	181
 Summary.....	 183
The Reason for Being.....	183
Glossary.....	187

Introduction

The Bible and The Urantia Book

William Lucas, with his deep knowledge of the Holy Bible and his study of The Urantia Book, has performed a great service for humanity. Writing in easily understood English, Lucas brings together these two great revelatory books and shows how The Urantia Book clears up questions that arise from the Bible.

The Urantia Foundation first published The Urantia Book in 1955. Urantia is the name of our planet, so named on the registry of the worlds of time and space. Urantia is just one of the trillions of inhabited worlds in the vast superuniverse created by God the Father.

With the help of The Urantia Book, Lucas has solved several enigmas: Who built the Sphinx, the Pyramids, and other incredible megalithic structures around the world? Lucas starts by explaining that Adam and Eve were not the first two people on earth. Readers can prove this to themselves by reading verses (Genesis 4:8-17) in the Bible carefully. These verses show it was impossible for Adam and Eve to have been the first two people.

According to the Higher Beings who indited The Urantia Book, Adam and Eve were extraterrestrials who came to Urantia 37 thousand years ago as biological, genetic, and spiritual uplifters. Humanity had reached its natural peak after evolving from the animal kingdom over millions of years. When Adam and Eve came to our planet their bodies were rematerialized.

Today millions of humans on earth benefit from the uplifting of Adam and Eve's genetic gift to humanity, genes that include music, humor, spirituality, and agricultural genius. Adam and Eve's immediate descendants were intellectual giants who went all over the world spreading their genes and helping to civilize humanity; to this day their offspring are intellectuals. It was Adam and Eve's descendants who built megalithic structures all over the planet. These megalithic structures in far distant locations from each other show remarkable similarities. Eventually, Adam and Eve's genes waned, and humanity began to level off—but not until great civilizations began to thrive including the Aryans, Sumerians, and Incas. Thousands of years after the time of Adam and Eve their descendants were still building places like Gobekli Tepe.

Many years ago, in the late 1950s, Lucas read *The Story of Civilization*, by historian Will Durant. Durant mentioned that historians and other academics were puzzled by the *sudden* civilization of humanity. Civilization appeared to have happened overnight. Lucas puzzled over the question of the sudden onset of civilization and was thrilled to discover that The Urantia Book scientifically solves that enigma.

Fifty plus years after Will Durant was writing, academics are still puzzling over how we came to be civilized; yet because academics are limited to what they can discover in archeological and documented records, the gap has continued to widen between Biblical research and academic research. An academic would be ridiculed by his peers for suggesting that extraterrestrial beings came to our planet to help civilize humankind. Lucas closes that gap, using The Urantia Book which reconciles science, philosophy and religion.

In Genesis 6:4, the Bible states: "There were giants in the earth in those days; and also, after that when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children unto them some became mighty men that were of old, men of renown." The Sumerians called the sons of God Anunnaki (those who came from heaven).

"The quote above mentioned "There were giants, or Nephilim, on earth in those days, and after that, the sons of God started having children by the daughters of men. Where did the giants come from? Those giants were unique beings. Who were their original parents? This will also be explained in a later chapter."

The sons of God lived on earth for thousands of years in what The Urantia Book calls the Dalamatian civilization, teaching barbaric man civilized arts including cultivation of crops, animal husbandry, pottery, weaving, and architecture. During the Dalamatian civilization, about 200,000 years ago, the Lucifer Rebellion occurred. Who was Lucifer, and why did Caligastia, Earth's Planetary Prince, follow Lucifer into rebellion? What consequences of the Lucifer Rebellion do our planet still suffer? Jesus spoke of the Planetary Prince in (John 16:11): "The prince of this world is judged."

Well, they have been setting the stage for thousands of years to trap humanity so they can rule the world for their Satanic purposes. Did you ask who they are? In ancient times they were the descendants of the sons of God celestial beings who had children with humans in Genesis 6:4 who became men of renown and were known for thousands of years as Nephilim. Not all Nephilim were giants, but all descendants of the sons of God were known as Nephilim.

A book known as The Urantia Book claims surgeons from a higher universe came to our planet at the same time the celestial sons came took plasma from the most advanced humans, and with bioengineering created superior bodies for those sons of God. That is how they were able to have children with humans, their bodies were made of human DNA. Look at what the geneticists are doing on earth today, cloning and such.

After thousands of years, those sons' descendants who became men of renown are the ones who attempted to build The Tower of Babel. After that, they scattered Genesis 11:8. According to The Urantia Book, some became the people of the Land of Nod, where Cain found his wife, and that tells us Adam and Eve were not the first two people on earth, Cain wife's parents had to be older than Cain the first human born on earth. And after mixing with Adam and Eve's offspring a group of the men of renowned descendants at the mouth of the Tigris and Euphrates Rivers became the Andites (Aryans) and later the Sumerians.

The Sumerians appeared on Earth about 200,000 years after the Anunnaki (those who came from heaven) who were the same beings as the celestial sons of God of Genesis 6:4. So the Sumerians didn't know too much more than we do about the Anunnaki sons of God. The Sumerians were mixed offspring of the sons of God, and they didn't want the stigma of their ancient ancestors rebelling along with Lucifer when he rebelled against the Laws of God.

Over half of the sons of God who came to earth to help civilize humanity Hunter-gatherers rebelled along with Lucifer about 200,000 years ago. They had The Tree of Life, and they were able to live on Earth indefinitely. When they sinned, the Tree was taken from them, and they would surely die. Their commander ordered them to start having children to increase their numbers.

Here is something they made sure they hid from us. They started having children among themselves. In ancient times men and women were often called sons of God there were no distinctions. See Hebrews 12:6-7. So, in Genesis 6:4 the sons of God were men and women, and they started having children that is where the giants come from. It says in Genesis 6:4 that after the giants, they started having children with humans. They were having so much trouble with the giants, Numbers 13:30-33 and Deuteronomy 2:10 and 2:20 the group

commander ordered them to start having children with humans, Genesis 6:4 says those children became men of renown. Today we are fighting their descendants who want to rule the world.

This book contains many quotations from the Bible and from the Urantia Book. Bible quotes are referenced by chapter and verse, for example, (Genesis 6:4). Quotes from the Urantia Book are referenced by paper, section, and paragraph, for example, 168:1.9 meaning 168th paper, 1st section, 9th paragraph. Quotes from The Urantia Book are printed in *italics*.

Chapter 1

And There Was Light

Today's astrophysicists assure us there are hundreds of thousands of universes out in space. In the Bible (Genesis 1:3) states, "And God said: Let there be light, and there was light." Further down in (Genesis 1:26), we read: "Let us make man in our image, after our likeness." The Higher Beings who wrote The Urantia Book, tell us:

The Paradise Creator Sons

[21:0.1] *The Creator Sons are the makers and rulers of the local universes of time and space. These universe creators and sovereigns are of dual origin, embodying the characteristics of God the Father and God the Son. But each Creator Son is different from every other; each is unique in nature as well as in personality; each is the "only begotten Son" of the perfect deity ideal of his origin.*

[21:0.2] *In the vast work of organizing, evolving and perfecting a local universe, these high Sons always enjoy the sustaining approval of the Universal Father. The relationship of the Creator Sons with their Paradise Father is touching and superlative. No doubt the profound affection of the Deity parents for their divine progeny is the wellspring of that beautiful and well-nigh divine love which even mortal parents bear their children.*

[21:0.3] *These primary Paradise Sons are personalized as Michaels. As they go forth from Paradise to found their universes, they are known as Creator Michaels. When settled in supreme authority, they are called Master Michaels. Sometimes we refer to the sovereign of your universe of Nebadon as Christ Michael. Always and forever do they reign after the "order of Michael," that being the designation of the first Son of their order and nature. [In this book all sections in italics are exact quotes from The Urantia Book.]*

This text teaches that God has many Creator Sons; each Creator Son creates his unique universe. The Urantia Book teaches that Jesus is one of these Creator Sons. When Jesus mentioned in (John 18:36) "My kingdom is not of this world," he meant literally that his kingdom is our local universe, the universe called Nebadon—which encompasses millions of inhabited planets.

God the Father's statement, "Let there be light," describes the beginning of time and space as we know it. Before, there was no time and no space, there was only God-consciousness which has existed for all eternity. Physicists have recently discovered a phenomenon called the zero-point-energy-field. We can think of this field as the light mentioned in (Genesis 1:3). The zero-point-energy-field is the lowest energy field known to man. The substance of this field is said to be far below that of an atom; it is where thought becomes energy and energy becomes matter. Physicists are saying this field is everywhere present and is intelligent stuff; it records everything that happens in the universe.

The zero-point-energy-field reminds me of what Hindu sages call the Akashic Records, an energy field that records everything in the universe. Hindu sages have known about the Akashic Records for thousands of years. How often during your life have you heard or read about people almost drowning who later said their whole life flashed before their eyes? I believe these people experienced a recording of the zero-point-energy-field. I sincerely believe this field is the world soul, the intrinsic connection between everything.

This recording energy is mentioned in Revelations in the *Bible*, as the book of life. "And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened, which is

the book of life; and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works." (Revelation 20:12). This is how you reap what you sow.

Readers, scientists have proven the zero-point-energy field exists. Ervin Laszlo, a physicist, proved that there is an Akashic Record (as the Hindus have taught for many years), and other physicists have confirmed his results. Physicists named it the zero-point-energy-field or vacuum-field. In his book, *Science and the Re-enchantment of the Cosmos*, Laszlo recited a story told by a young East Indian boy of a past life that was very convincing.

Stories like these, he says, are not the products of human imagination; they are truthful in the sense that those who recall them "remember" them. But these memories may not be what most people believe they are. The experiences only tell us that many children, and some adults in altered states of consciousness, can access the consciousness of other people. These people could be near or far away, living or dead. In other words, having these experiences does not mean that those who have them are the flesh and blood reincarnation of those experiences they recollect.

Laszlo wrote that the more modest and astounding explanation of past-life experiences is that they constitute access to the holographic vacuum traces of another person's consciousness. If we are not able to distinguish an "alien" hologram from our own, then we relive another person's consciousness as our own. The person whom we are reliving may live in another state or country or could have lived during some other period. He says the holograms that carry their life experiences are carried throughout space and don't fade out. Laszlo states: "Those who undergo past-life experience cannot, and ordinarily do not, distinguish other people's holograms from their own. For them, long-term personal memory merges imperceptibly into transpersonal memory."

Many years ago, I read the works of psychologist Carl Jung and his theory of the Collective Unconscious which is one and the same with the Hindu Akashic Record. Carl Jung believed everyone has access to the same unconscious information, especially in dreams and altered states of mind. Carl Jung's Collective Unconscious has the same energy quality as the Hindu Akashic Records and the physicists' zero-point-energy-field. I realized after reading Jung's work that people must be tapping into those records and thinking that they have experienced a past life. I was elated to read Ervin Laszlo's book, *Science and the Akashic Field*, which he had soundproof of my belief.

I recall as a child looking into a toy hologram I received as a Christmas present from a precinct in Brooklyn, New York. I remember thinking how strange and fascinating it was that the images were repeating themselves. Now, to learn over 60 years later that the same principle appears to be the necessary foundation of the entire cosmos is overwhelming. According to the quantum physicists of our time, all energy comes from the zero-point-energy field. Somehow everything on the physical plane causes an interference pattern on this energy field, and as a result, some can see those three-dimensional pictures. People who can tap into these unusual scenes are usually in an altered state of consciousness.

The Distortion Of The Bible

Throughout the years, humanity has been misled. The misconception that Adam and Eve were the first two people on Earth has brought humanity prolonged confusion about Earth's history. In the Bible, (Genesis 4:9-17) shows it was impossible for Adam and Eve to have been the first two people on earth. We read in (Genesis 4:8-17) "And Cain talked with Abel, his brother: and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel, his brother, and slew him. And the Lord said unto Cain, where is Abel thy brother? And he said I know not: Am I my brother's keeper? And he said, what hast thou done? The voice of thy brother's blood crieth unto me from the ground. And now art thou cursed from the

earth, which hath opened her mouth to receive thy brother's blood from thy hand. When thou tillest the ground, it shall not henceforth yield unto thee her strength; a fugitive and a vagabond shalt thou be in the earth. And Cain said unto the Lord, my punishment is greater than I can bear. Behold, thou hast driven me out this day from the face of the earth; and from thy face shall I be hidden; and I shall be a fugitive and a vagabond in the earth, and it shall come to pass, that everyone that findeth me shall slay me. And the Lord said unto him. Therefore whosoever slayeth Cain vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold. And the Lord set a mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him. And Cain went out from the presence of the Lord, and dwelt in the land of Nod, to the east of Eden. And Cain knew his wife, and she conceived, and bare Enoch: and he built a city, and called the name of the city, after the name of his son, Enoch." The strange thing here Cain beings the first human child, and his wife's parents had to be older than Cain.

First of all, why was Cain afraid to leave the Garden of Eden, afraid that someone might harm him—if only his parents remained on the planet after killing his brother? There were other people on earth! Why would Cain go to the Land of Nod if there was no one there? This verse mentions the Lord placed a mark on Cain and warned: that whoever slays Cain vengeance will be taken upon them sevenfold. Who was the Lord warning? According to the Bible itself, the people of the Land of Nod had to have existed before the arrival of Adam and Eve. According to *The Urantia Book*, the Nodites had arrived thousands of years earlier.

This story raises the question: If Adam and Eve were not the first two people on earth, who were the first? According to *The Urantia Book*, the first two humans evolved from seeds planted in the sea by Life Carriers of Nebadon. After millions of years of evolving, the DNA of those seeds brought forth humans. The information to become human was planted in the DNA of those seeds millions of years before humans evolved. Adam and Eve were sent to our planet from central Nebadon 37,000 years ago as biological uplifters after humanity had reached its biological peak.

"Richard Klein, a paleoanthropologist at Stanford University, suggested that a genetic mutation occurred 40,000 years ago and caused an abrupt revolution in the way people thought and behaved. Check it out. During that time all the different subspecies disappeared such as (Neanderthals, Denisovans, *H. erectus*).

Adam and Eve were commanded to be fruitful and multiply; they were to nurture one million offspring: children, grandchildren, great-grandchildren, and so on. Adam and Eve could have lived indefinitely so long as they continued to eat the fruit of the Tree of Life. According to the divine plan, one million Adamites, offspring of Adam and Eve, were to go out from Eden and breed with the native races of the planet to uplift the human genome.

Due to pressures from Caligastia, the Luciferin rebel, Adam and Eve defaulted long before they reached one million offspring. After Adam and Eve defaulted, the Tree of Life that would enable them to live indefinitely was taken from them. Adam and Eve continued their original plan to uplift humanity with their superior genes even though without the Tree of Life they were doomed to die, just like the humans they came to help. Many of Adam and Eve's descendants were determined to fulfill their parents' original divine plan.

I discovered the book in 1997 in a New York newspaper. It was the 4th of July weekend and a community group was celebrating the Roswell New Mexico UFO crash of 1947. The Urantia Foundation had a booth selling *The Urantia Book*. A reporter wrote a story about the Urantia Book. He exaggerated and said this book claimed Jesus was the leader of extraterrestrials: That caught my attention and prompted me to purchase the book and see for myself. I called the East West Book Store in Manhattan, and they had the book in stock. That was Friday, July 4, 1997. The next day I rushed from Brooklyn where I was living to the East West Book Store. I did not expect to find a book of over 2,000 pages, and I was in

awe. The book said nothing about Jesus being the leader of extraterrestrials, but as I searched the table of contents, I did recognize names, for example, Michael, the Melchizedek, Adam, and Eve.

I had been searching all of my adult life to discover, what is humanity's purpose on this planet. I was 60 years old when The Urantia Book commanded my full attention, for this book is full of answers. The Urantia Foundation calls the book Humanity's fifth revelation. The first epochal revelation was the teachings of the planetary prince, called the Sons of God in Genesis 6:4. The second revelation was the life and work of Adam and Eve. The third was the teachings of the Melchizedek. The fourth revelation was the life and teachings of Jesus Christ. The book of the Fifth Revelation is enormous and I can see how it would intimidate most people. I was determined to analyze the book's, contents, so I bought the book that Saturday for \$20.

Soon blessed with three weeks of vacation, I spent much of my time reading The Urantia Book, and I was amazed at the information it contained. The Urantia Book was compiled during the 1920s and 1930s, yet it spoke of tectonic plates, which humanity did not discover until the 1960's. How this book came into being is complicated. When I started reading the book, I wanted to know who wrote the book. After reading the book's 2,097 pages, I realized no human could have written such an advanced spiritual book without help from a higher source. The religious information in the book is too consistent and superior for humans to have created it. I realized it would be a waste of time trying to find a human author. The Urantia Book was published in 1955 by a group led by Dr. William Sadler of Chicago. Dr. Sadler was ruled out as the author of the book by academia. To this day The Urantia Book is considered to have no human author.

The Dawn of Life

I am aware that some people believe life started by chance. One microbiologist who understood the intricate structures of life calculated it would be easier for a tornado to go through a junkyard and create a massive 747 jumbo jet than for life to have started by chance. And I would agree with him.

From the information I have gleaned through the years, especially from The Urantia Book, our molten earth started to cool down about one billion years ago. The Urantia Book mentions around 600 million years ago a commission of beings in the higher worlds sent to earth a group of Life Carriers to study whether the physical condition of our planet was ready for life to be initiated. Life Carriers are the beings who bring life to a planet. Like modern-day scientists on Earth, Life Carriers can manipulate life, but they cannot give life. Only the Universe Mother Spirit can provide the initial spark of life and the gift of mind. She is the "Mother" of Nebadon, our local universe; she is the spirit of God who gives the breath of life. Psalms 104:30 mentions her: "Thou sendest forth thy Spirit, and they are created: and thou renewest the face of the earth."

After extensive study of our planet, the Life Carriers decided upon a sodium chloride pattern of life, but they could not plant the seeds until the oceans became sufficiently briny. The earth's type of protoplasm can function only in a suitable salt solution.

All ancestral life—vegetable, and animal—evolved in a salt solution habitat. The land animals who emerged from the ocean circulated this essential salt solution in their bloodstreams, every cell submerged in this life-giving brine. The Urantia Book says:

[36:0.1] *Life does not originate spontaneously. Life is constructed according to plans formulated by the (unrevealed) Architects of Being and appears on the inhabited planets either by direct importation or as a result of the operations of the Life Carriers of the local universe. These carriers of life are among the most interesting and versatile of the diverse family of*

universe Sons. They are intrusted with designing and carrying creature life to the planetary spheres. And after planting this life on such new worlds, they remain there for long periods to foster its development. Consequently, when the ocean became sufficiently briny, Urantia's Life Carriers commenced to perform their duty:

[58:4.2] *550,000,000 years ago the Life Carrier corps returned to Urantia. In cooperation with spiritual powers and superphysical forces we organized and initiated the original life patterns of this world and planted them in the hospitable waters of the realm. All planetary life (aside from extra-planetary personalities) down to the days of Caligastia, the Planetary Prince, had its origin in our three original, identical, and simultaneous marine-life implantations. These three life implantations have been designated as: the central or Eurasian-African, the eastern or Australasian, and the western, embracing Greenland and the Americas. Caligastia is the Planetary Prince, whom Jesus referred to as the Prince of this world (John 16:11).*

450,000,000 years ago, the phenomenon of transition from vegetable life to animal life commenced. This change took place in the shallow waters and protected tropical lagoons on the shorelines of the separating continents. There were many different stages between the early primitive vegetable forms of life and the later animal organisms. Today we can see vestiges of old molds which can hardly be called either plants or animals. A gradual series of vegetable and animals successively led from the simplest to the most complex organisms. However, you will not be able to find that connecting link in the animal kingdom or between the highest pre-human and the dawn of the human race. Such anthropologists as Louis and Mary Leakey searched in the 1940's and the 1950's for the so-called missing link between the ape family and the humans. In 1974, an old skull was discovered in Ethiopia which anthropologists later called Lucy. These anthropologists were convinced they had found the missing link—but realized later they were mistaken. The Urantia Book says the missing link will never be found, for the simple reason that there never was one.

From time to time, new species of animal life appeared. They did not evolve due to the gradual accumulation of small variations; they came as an entirely new order of life inherent in the original DNA and appeared *suddenly*. The sudden appearance of new species of living organisms was strictly biologic; there is nothing supernatural about these genetic mutations. It was nature doing her job—the Life Carriers implanted genetic mutation instructions in the DNA of those seeds millions of years before they appeared.

The higher protozoan types of life appeared *suddenly*. The offspring of millions-of-years-old amebas is with us today, and little has changed throughout the years. These creatures, the amebas, amuse themselves just about as they did when they were the latest and most significant achievement in life evolution. The amebas are to the animal kingdom what bacteria are to the plant kingdom. It wasn't long before single-celled amebas conglomerated into communities and formed organisms. First appeared the volvox, then the hydra and jellyfish. Much later the starfish appeared.

From these minute creatures, the stage was set for the first backboned animal, the fish. From the fish family sprang two unique modifications—frogs and salamanders. It was the frog that started the progressive differentiation in animal life that finally brought forth man. Higher Beings consider the frog to be one of man's earliest surviving ancestors. The frog mutated, but it also failed to progress, remaining the same as it had been millions of years ago. The Urantia Book says there is no surviving ancestry between the frog and man. From the **frog** came the reptiles, a great animal family that is all but extinct. But before they disappeared, the reptiles brought forth the entire bird family and many other mammals. Can you imagine those huge dinosaurs as descendants of a little frog?

The Higher Beings say the most significant leap of all pre-human evolution was when the reptiles became birds. The birds of today (eagle, duck, pigeon, etc.) are all descendants of those reptiles millions of years ago. The Higher Beings claim it was a little reptilian dinosaur, a flesh-eating predator, who developed rapidly into a variety of land creatures, and also marine mammals such as seals and whales, and air navigators like the bird families.

The Dawn of Man

About a million years ago, the direct ancestors of humanity made their appearance by three successive and sudden mutations coming from the early stock of lemur types of placental mammals. The most critical factors of these old lemurs stemmed from the western (American) type of evolving life plasma. But before establishing a direct line of human ancestry, this strain was reinforced by contributions from the central life implantation that developed in Africa. The eastern life implantation contributed nothing to the actual production of the human species.

The early lemur type that was part of the ancestry of the human race was not related to the pre-existent apes and gibbons living in Eurasia and North Africa whose offspring have survived to the present. Nor were the early pre-humans offspring of present-day lemurs. Early pre-humans were the offspring of a lemur of common ancestry to both, but long extinct. The early lemur evolved in the Western Hemisphere. The establishment of the direct mammalian ancestry of men took place in Southwestern Asia in the area where the first life implantation took place, but on the border of the eastern regions. The writer of this section of The Urantia Book says that several million years ago the Northern American types of lemur migrated westward over the Bering land bridge and slowly made their way southwest along the Asiatic coast. These migrating tribes finally reached the vast region between the Mediterranean Sea and the elevated mountainous region of the Indian Peninsula. In this location west of India, they joined other favorable strains of prehuman ancestry.

The Higher Beings who indited The Urantia Book describe our ancestral lemur of hundreds of thousands of years ago: About one million years ago the Mesopotamian dawn mammals, direct descendants of the North American lemur type of placental mammals, *suddenly* appeared. They were frisky little creatures; they grew to about three feet tall. They did not habitually walk on their hind legs, but they easily stood erect. They were hairy and quick, and they chattered like monkeys but, unlike the simian tribes, they ate meat. They had primitive opposable thumbs, also highly useful for grasping big toes. The later apes kept the big grasping toes but never evolved the human type of opposable thumb. Those dawn mammals were full-grown at four years old. Most of the time they were born singly, although twins were occasionally born. This new class of species had the most massive brains for the size of any animal living on Earth. They had many of the instincts and emotions of primitive man. Food hunger and yearning for sex were well-developed.

Early in the life of these dawn mammals in the treetop home of a superior pair of these agile creatures twins were born, a male and a female. Compared to their ancestors, they were beautiful little creatures. They had little hair on their bodies, which wasn't a problem as they lived in a warm climate. They grew a little over four feet tall. They were more substantial in every way than their parents, having longer legs and shorter arms, and they had almost perfectly opposable thumbs. They walked upright and had feet virtually as suitable for walking as modern day humans.

Their brains were inferior and smaller than human brains, but superior and larger than their ancestors' brains. At a young age, the twins displayed superior intelligence and were soon recognized as the leaders of all the dawn mammals. When the number of their

group increased, war broke out, and when the offensive struggle was over, not one of the pre-existent ancestral race of dawn mammals were alive.

For 15 thousand years (600 generations) the new species became the terror of that part of the world. All the ferocious animals of an earlier time had perished. The large animals native to that area were not carnivorous. And the large cat families had not entered that area of the earth yet.

Present-day man and the simians sprang from the same tribe and species, but not from the same parents. Man's ancestors mutated from superior strains of a select portion of this mid-mammal tribe. And many modern day simians are descendants of inferior couples of this mid-mammal group who survived by hiding in a deep cave (where they had stored food) for two weeks during the last fierce battle of their tribe, coming out after the fight was over.

In comparison, our ancestral species were an improvement in every way. Even the lifespan was longer (about 25 years), and some essential human traits appeared in the new species. Those mid-mammals were the first to show an inclination toward construction, as shown in their rivalry in building treetop sleeping quarters and subterranean retreats. They were the first on earth to provide for their safety in both arboreal and underground shelters. They forsook the trees as their homes, living on the ground during the day and sleeping in the trees at night.

The direct lemur-like mother of the dawn mammal species escaped death no less than five times before she gave birth to children of a new and more advanced order of mammals. But the closest call occurred when lightning struck the tree where the future mother and father of the primate twins were sleeping. Both parents were shocked and their bodies badly burned, and three of their seven children perished by this bolt of lightning from the skies. These evolving mammals were on the borderline of being superstitious. The couple whose treehouse burned were leaders of a more advanced group of mammals. Following their example, more than half of this group relocated their treetop homes. They moved about two miles away and built themselves new sleeping quarters and underground shelters where they retreated when danger was near.

It wasn't long after finishing their homes this couple with so many tribulations found themselves the excited parents of male and female twins, the most exciting and essential mammals ever to be born in the world up to that time. These twins were the first of the new species of the backward primates that were the next vital step in pre-human evolution.

Another couple of mid-mammals who were mentally and physically inferior also give birth to male and female twins. These twins weren't interested in conquest and were concerned only with finding food. They didn't eat meat, so they lost interest in prey. These mentally inferior twins became the founders of the modern-day simian tribes. Their descendants preferred a warmer climate where tropical fruits were abundant, and they continue today as they were at that time.

According to The Urantia Book, man and apes are related because they originated from the same mid-mammals. The inferior pair was bound to produce the modern-day monkey, baboon, chimpanzee, and gorilla; the superior pair was to continue the line of ascent that evolved into modern day man.

In 1972, two paleontologists, Stephen Jay Gould and Niles Eldredge, came up with the hypothesis of Punctuated Equilibrium from observing when new species appear in the fossil records. There is an extended period when new life forms are not appearing on earth; then *suddenly* many new species appear at once. See paper 62 of The Urantia Book.

The Primates

Referring to the birth of the superior twins, the leading members of the mid-mammal tribes, these babies were unusual. They had less hair on their bodies than their parents, and when they were very young they insisted on walking upright. Their ancestors learned to walk upright on their hind legs, but these children stood upright from the beginning. They grew to a height of five feet, and their heads were longer than any other in their tribe. They communicated with each other by signs and sounds although they were never able to teach their tribe these new symbols.

Around age 14, the twins fled from their tribe going west to start a new species of primate. These new creatures were rightly called primates since they were the direct animal ancestors of the human family. These primates were more human and less animal. To view a skeleton of the new species, they were similar to the primitive human race. They had fully developed human hands and feet, and they could walk and run as well as humans.

The increased use of their hands helped them develop brain power, although they did not have a mental capacity that could be called human. They reached maturity at about ten years old and had a natural lifespan of about 40 years. After almost 900 generations of development covering about 21 thousand years from the original dawn mammals, two primate parents *suddenly* gave birth to two awesome creatures—the first two human beings.

It is hard to believe the thousands of years of pain and sorrow our ancient ancestors had to face for humanity to reach this stage of our evolution. And few of us extend a grateful thought to these ancient ancestors; we don't understand the importance of their lives, we are not evolved enough.

I sincerely believe we present-day humans should meditate and give thanks to our ancient ancestors who endured these experiences so that we could evolve to where we understand and are aware of the existence of a Creator. We who are aware of our Creator are here to help those who do not yet recognize these truths, or who need a little more time to grasp these truths. Not everyone is in the same grade in the schoolhouse of the earth! I sincerely believe that many of our ancient ancestors survived death, and now have an eternal home in the higher worlds we call heaven. I hope these ancient ancestors can see what's happening on our planet through what scientists call today the zero-point-energy-field and what the Hindu people call The Akashic records.

I am acutely aware that these concepts are new to some people. All our lives we have been conditioned to believe certain things. Our brains are like computers and have to be programmed to absorb new information. We humans have free will, and if we sincerely open our minds to new ideas, eventually our souls will recognize the truth.

The First Human Beings

[62:5.1] From the year A.D. 1934 back to the birth of the first two human beings is just 993,419 years.

[62:5.2] These two remarkable creatures were true human beings. They possessed perfect human thumbs, as had many of their ancestors, while they had just as perfect feet as the present-day human race. They were walkers and runners, not climbers: the grasping function of the big toe was absent, completely absent. When danger drove them to the treetops, they climbed just like humans of today would. They would climb up the trunk of a tree like a bear and not as would a chimpanzee or a gorilla, swinging up by the branches.

[62:5.3] These first human beings (and their descendants) reached full maturity at twelve years of age and possessed a potential life span of about seventy-five years.

[62:5.4] *Many new emotions early appeared in these human twins. They experienced admiration for both objects and other beings and exhibited considerable vanity. But the most remarkable advance in emotional development was the sudden appearance of a new group of really human feelings, the worshipful group, embracing awe, reverence, humility, and even a primitive form of gratitude. Fear, joined with ignorance of natural phenomena, is about to give birth to primitive religion.*

[62:5.5] *Not only were such human feelings manifested in these primitive humans, but many more highly evolved sentiments were also present in rudimentary form. They were mildly cognizant of pity, shame, and reproach and were acutely conscious of love, hate, and revenge, being also susceptible to marked feelings of jealousy.*

[62:5.6] *These first two humans—the twins—were a great trial to their Primates parents. They were so curious and adventurous that they nearly lost their lives on numerous occasions before they were eight years old. As it was, they were rather well scarred up by the time they were twelve.*

[62:5.7] *Very early they learned to engage in verbal communication; by the age of ten they had worked out an improved sign and word language of almost half a hundred ideas and had greatly improved and expanded the crude communicative technique of their ancestors. But try as hard as they might, they were able to teach only a few of their new signs and symbols to their parents.*

[62:5.8] *When about nine years of age, they journeyed off down the river one bright day and held a momentous conference. Every celestial intelligence stationed on Urantia, including myself, was present as an observer of the transactions of this noontide tryst. On this eventful day they arrived at an understanding to live with and for each other, and this was the first of a series of such agreements which finally culminated in the decision to flee from their inferior animal associates and to journey northward, little knowing that they were thus to found the human race.*

[62:5.9] *While we were all greatly concerned with what these two little savages were planning, we were powerless to control the working of their minds; we did not—could not—arbitrarily influence their decisions. But within the permissible limits of planetary function, we, the Life Carriers, together with our associates, all conspired to lead the human twins northward and far from their hairy and partially tree-dwelling people. And so, by reason of their intelligent choice, the twins did migrate, and because of our supervision, they migrated northward to a secluded region where they escaped the possibility of biologic degradation through admixture with their inferior relatives of the Primates tribes.*

[62:5.10] *Shortly before their departure from the home forests they lost their mother in a gibbon raid. While she did not possess their intelligence, she did have a worthy mammalian affection of a high order for her offspring, and she fearlessly gave her life in the attempt to save the wonderful pair. Nor was her sacrifice in vain, for she held off the enemy until the father arrived with reinforcements and put the invaders to rout.*

[62:5.11] *Soon after this young couple forsook their associates to found the human race, their Primates father became disconsolate—he was heartbroken. He refused to eat, even when food was brought to him by his other children. His brilliant offspring having been lost, life did not seem worth living among his ordinary fellows; so he wandered off into the forest, was set upon by hostile gibbons and beaten to death.*

It is such magnificent stories that we present-day humans need to contemplate in gratitude for the sacrifices our ancient ancestors made so that today we can recognize and experience spiritual life. We all need to be aware that Earth is a schoolhouse and we are not all in the same grade.

Evolution of the Human Mind

[62:6.1] We, the Life Carriers on Urantia, had passed through the long vigil of watchful waiting since the day we first planted the life plasma in the planetary waters, and naturally the appearance of the first really intelligent and volitional beings brought to us great joy and supreme satisfaction.

[62:6.2] We had been watching the twins develop mentally through our observation of the functioning of the seven adjutant mind-spirits assigned to Urantia at the time of our arrival on the planet. Throughout the long evolutionary development of planetary life, these tireless mind ministers had ever registered their increasing ability to contact with the successively expanding brain capacities of the progressively superior animal creatures.

[62:6.3] At first only the spirit of intuition could function in the instinctive and reflex behavior of the primordial animal life. With the differentiation of higher types, the spirit of understanding was able to endow such creatures with the gift of spontaneous association of ideas. Later on we observed the spirit of courage in operation; evolving animals really developed a crude form of protective self-consciousness. Subsequent to the appearance of the mammalian groups, we beheld the spirit of knowledge manifesting itself in increased measure. And the evolution of the higher mammals brought the function of the spirit of counsel, with the resulting growth of the herd instinct and the beginnings of primitive social development.

[62:6.4] Increasingly, on down through the dawn mammals, the mid-mammals, and the Primates, we had observed the augmented service of the first five adjutants. But never had the remaining two, the highest mind ministers, been able to function in the Urantia type of evolutionary mind.

[62:6.5] Imagine our joy one day—the twins were about ten years old—when the spirit of worship made its first contact with the mind of the female twin and shortly thereafter with the male. We knew that something closely akin to human mind was approaching culmination; and when, about a year later, they finally resolved, as a result of meditative thought and purposeful decision, to flee from home and journey north, then did the spirit of wisdom begin to function on Urantia and in these two now recognized human minds.

[62:6.6] There was an immediate and new order of mobilization of the seven adjutant mind-spirits. We were alive with expectation; we realized that the long-awaited-for hour was approaching; we knew we were upon the threshold of the realization of our protracted effort to evolve will creatures on Urantia.

And so, according to the Life Carriers, this was the beginning of humanity as recorded in *The Urantia Book*, and they witnessed it all.

The adjutant mind-spirits activate and regulate the adaptive or non-mechanical teachable types of minds—in other words, the human types of mind—the types of mind that are capable of learning from experience. Just as the spirit adjutants manipulate mind potential, so the Life Carriers exercise considerable discretionary control over the environmental aspects of the evolutionary processes up to the time of the appearance of human will, the ability to do God's will, and to potentially worship Him.

Here is where my spiritual joy overwhelmed me—to read about these Higher Beings discussing their feelings, emotions, and desires. I was amazed and not prepared for this. We in the Western World were taught all our lives that angels and the higher creatures of God were perfect beings who had no emotions or feelings, and who were conditioned to do God's will automatically. In *The Urantia Book* archangels and Life Carriers express their supreme satisfaction at the appearance of will creatures, and how they and other creatures of God worked industriously as they guided precious seeds of life through millions of years of evolution to result in creatures who have free will. We humans need to realize we are evolving beings, and we are still developing. The way we can help in this process is to try to do our

part in fulfilling God's will, which is the primary process in our evolving. The quickest way to evolve is to strive to do God's will.

Continuing over the next few days, the Life Carriers who were stationed on Urantia were given praise for the magnificent work they had accomplished in developing volitional creatures on our planet Urantia. The Life Carriers work in another dimension of a higher vibration. Humans do not have the equipment to detect Life Carriers.

To give this information a foundation, I quote an entire section from Paper 62, Section 7 of The Urantia Book. In Section 7, place names are mentioned which may not be familiar to the reader: Salvington, Edentia, Satania, and Jerusem.

1. Salvington is the capital of our local universe, the universe of Nebadon. Nebadon is governed by our Creator Son Christ Michael (whom we know as Jesus Christ) with his Universe Mother Spirit consort.

2. Edentia is the headquarters of the constellation to which our system belongs.

3. Satania is the administrative system of approximately one thousand habitable worlds to which our planet belongs.

4. Jerusem is the headquarters of Satania.

Recognition as an Inhabited World

[62:7.1] We did not have to wait long. At noon, the day after the runaway of the twins, there occurred the initial test flash of the universe circuit signals at the planetary reception-focus of Urantia. We were all astir with the realization that a great event was impending; but since this world was a life experiment station, we had not the slightest idea of just how we would be apprised of the recognition of intelligent life on the planet. But we were not long in suspense. On the third day after elopement of the twins, and before the Life Carrier corps departed, there arrived the Nebadon Archangel of initial planetary circuit establishment.

[62:7.2] It was an eventful day on Urantia when our small group gathered about the planetary pole of space communication and received the first message from Salvington over the newly established mind circuit of the planet. And this first message, dictated by the chief of the archangel corps, said:

[62:7.3] "To the Life Carriers of Urantia—Greetings! We transmit assurance of great pleasure on Salvington, Edentia, and Jerusem in honor of the registration on the headquarters of Nebadon of the signal of the existence on Urantia of mind of will dignity. The purposeful decision of the twins to flee northward and segregate their offspring from their inferior ancestors has been noted. This is the first decision of mind--the human type of mind--on Urantia and automatically establishes the circuit of communication over which this initial message of acknowledgment is transmitting."

[62:7.4] Next over this new circuit came the greetings of the Most Highs of Edentia, containing instructions for the resident Life Carriers forbidding us to interfere with the pattern of life we had established. We were directed not to intervene in the affairs of human progress. It should not be inferred that Life Carriers ever arbitrarily and mechanically interfere with the natural overworking of the planetary evolutionary plans, for we do not. But up to this time we had been permitted to manipulate the environment and shield the life plasm in a special manner, and it was this extraordinary, but wholly natural, supervision that was to be discontinued.

[62:7.5] And no sooner had the Most Highs left off speaking than the beautiful message of Lucifer, then sovereign of the Satania system, began to planetize. Now the Life Carriers heard the welcome words of their own chief and received his permission to return to Jerusem. This message from Lucifer contained the official acceptance of the Life Carriers' work on

Urantia and absolved us from all future criticism of any of our efforts to improve the life patterns of Nebadon as established in the Satania system.

[62:7.6] These messages from Salvington, Edentia, and Jerusem formally marked the termination of the Life Carriers' age-long supervision of the planet. For ages we had been on duty, assisted only by the seven adjutant mind-spirits and the Master Physical Controllers. And now, will, the power of choosing to worship and to ascend, having appeared in the evolutionary creatures of the planet, we realized that our work was finished, and our group prepared to depart. Urantia being a life-modification world, permission was granted to leave behind two senior Life Carriers with twelve assistants, and I was chosen as one of this group and have ever since been on Urantia.

[62:7.7] It is just 993,408 years ago (from the year A.D. 1934) that Urantia was formally recognized as a planet of human habitation in the universe of Nebadon. Biologic evolution had once again achieved the human levels of will dignity; man had arrived on planet 606 of Satania.

When I read this section of The Urantia Book, I was able to glean information about the higher worlds or heaven. There is a hierarchical order in place throughout the universe. Life Carriers were allowed to help our ancient ancestors until human life evolved to be able to make free will decisions, not relying on instinct entirely.

Celestial broadcasts contained in circuits of the cosmic mind are extended to all worlds of time and space except for those worlds which are quarantined. (Urantia is quarantined because of the Lucifer Rebellion), Celestial broadcasts are the fastest communications in the universe, incalculably faster than the speed of light. According to The Urantia Book, Salvington, Edentia, and Jerusem, where these messages originated, are millions of light years away. Today our scientists know that thought travels faster than the speed of light.

Urantia continued to receive celestial broadcasts until the Lucifer Rebellion 200,000 years ago when the Quarantine of Norlatiadek was imposed. I carefully studied this section of The Urantia Book; this is where Lucifer took on a real identity for me. Lucifer was an important being: he was in charge of a system of one thousand planets, our planet included.

Urantia, our planet earth, was registered as an inhabited world when the first two human beings, the twins, were eleven years old, before they became the parents of the second generation of human beings on earth. The archangel message from Salvington on this occasion of formal recognition closed with these words:

[63:0.2] Man-mind has appeared on 606 of Satania, and these parents of the new race shall be called Andon and Fonta. And all archangels pray that these creatures may speedily be endowed with the personal indwelling of the gift of the spirit of the Universal Father.

That gift of the spirit of the Universal Father is mentioned in (1 Corinthians 3:16): "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?" This indwelling spirit of God is also called the Thought Adjuster or Mystery Monitor. Geneticists can't understand how man and ape can be so far apart intellectually when their genes show only a small percentage of difference. The genetic difference between humans and chimps is said to be less than 2%. Scientists can't understand from a physiological point of view how humans and chimps can be so closely related, and yet so different intellectually and psychologically.

The vast intellectual difference stems from the Spirit of God that indwells human beings. Jesus said in Luke 17:21, "The kingdom of heaven is within you."

Geneticists cannot figure this out because the fragment of God that indwells is not encoded in our genes, it is a gift of God the Father. The spirit of God is the reason we humans are unique. You will also find in Genesis 1:26: "Let us make man in our image after our likeness." The likeness is the Spirit of God in man.

Andon is a Nebadon (our local universe) name which signifies “the first Father-like creature to exhibit human perfection hunger.” And Fonta signifies “the first Son-like creature to exhibit human perfection hunger.” Andon and Fonta never knew these names until they were bestowed upon them at the time of fusion with the Spirit of God. Fusion with the Spirit of God will be explained in a later chapter. Throughout their mortal sojourn on earth, they called each other Sonta-an and Sonta-en. Sonta-an means “loved by Mother,” and Sonta-en means “loved by Father.” They give each other these names to show their regard and affection for each other.

With Andon and Fonta, humanity could now receive a fragment of the Spirit of the Universal Father, which we refer to as the God within. Throughout *The Urantia Book*, the God within is alluded to as the Thought Adjuster. Before this period of our prehistoric ancestors’ evolution, the God within did not indwell the minds of the pre-human races. The Spirit of the God within is a special endowment for those humans capable of free will choice.

I went through these pages excitedly realizing there is a great possibility that those creatures, Andon and Fonta, could very well be our first human parents. As I continued to read *The Urantia Book*, I was slowly reaching the conclusion that this information was given to us by Higher Beings. After reading the entire 2,097 pages and reviewing my entire adult life (I will be 80 on my next birthday), I know no human could have written a book of this nature. The book is too spiritually advanced and consistent for humans to have created it without help from a higher source. I realize man has been to the moon and back, but *The Urantia Book* contains a different kind of knowledge, knowledge humans can’t prove with mathematics or physics—yet completely consistent with all science.

To continue with our main story: After running away from their tribe, the twins continued to travel in a northward direction, experiencing great fear in the first few days. They especially feared to displease their father and immediate family; they imagined being attacked by hostile relatives and meeting death at the hands of jealous tribesmen. While living with their tribe, they had stayed mostly to themselves. They had built for themselves a separate treetop home that was superior to their tribal members’ homes, and it caused envy within their tribe. They weren’t popular with their animal cousins. It was while they were alone in their treetop home that they decided to leave.

The twins had already built a crude treetop retreat about a half day’s journey to the north where they visited at times to be alone; this was their secret hiding place. The twins feared to be on the ground at night, but they courageously left their tribal group a little before nightfall, surmising they would less likely be missed and pursued by their tribe and relatives. They safely reached their secret hideout around midnight of the day they left home.

After several days on their northern trek, they discovered a flint deposit containing stones of various sizes suitable for different uses. In attempting to chip the flint for specific purposes, Andon discovered the sparking quality of flint. The thought flashed through his mind of starting a fire with the spark flint produces when struck. Building a fire was not one of their primary concerns, and at the time the weather was still mild. But the autumn sun was getting lower in the sky as they continued their journey northward; the nights were getting cooler, and they used animals skin to keep themselves warm.

When the twins had been away from their tribe about a month, Andon told his mate he believed he could start a fire from the sparks the flint made when struck. They tried for two months to start a fire but failed. Each day they attempted to start a fire, until one day just before sunset, it dawned on Fonta as she sighted an abandoned dried bird nest way up in a tree, that they could start a fire with the nest. She quickly climbed the tree to secure the dry, highly flammable nest, which flared up as soon as sparks fell upon them. It startled

them. They almost lost the fire but saved it by adding more suitable fuel. Thus began the first search for firewood by the parents of all humanity.

This was one of the happiest moments of their short but eventful lives. All night they sat and watched the burning fire. They didn't realize they had made a discovery that would allow them to challenge the climate, and live forever free of their animal relatives of the southern land. The primate relatives of Andon and Fonta often used fire started by lightning, but never had a creature on earth had a method to start their own fire.

Around two years after leaving their tribe Andon and Fonta had their first child. They named him Sontad. Sontad was the first child to be born on Urantia who was wrapped in protective coverings at the time of birth. So began the instinct to properly care for the increasingly helpless infants that showed the progressive development of mind. Andon and Fonta had 19 children and lived to see about 50 grandchildren and half a dozen great-grandchildren. The family lived in four adjoining rock shelters or semi-caves. Three were interconnected by hallways excavated in the soft limestone with flint tools devised by the twins' children.

The Higher Beings describe the features of those earliest humans. They looked more like today's Eskimo than any other race of people. The tribal life of the early humans saw the beginning of numerous social customs. They were the first creatures to make use of animal skin.

The increase in brain power gave these primitive beings immediate development in social organization and a new division of clan labor. They were extremely imitative, but their play instinct only slightly developed. They had little sense of humor. They smiled on occasion, but they hardly engaged in hearty laughter. These primitive humans were not as sensitive as we are today. Childbirth was not as painful an ordeal to Fonta and her immediate progeny as it is for present-day mothers.

They were an astounding tribe. The male would fight to the last breath for his mate and offspring, and the mother was affectionately protective of her children. The primitive parents were very loyal to their families; they would die without question to protect their offspring. But the nascent emotions for the birth of religion were already present in these early humans. During the later years of the tribe, there constantly occurred battles with inferior tribes. Often one of those primitive men fought valiantly with one hand while with the other hand he struggled to protect an injured comrade. Many of the noble traits of modern humans were beginning to sprout in those primitive humans.

The Urantia Book states the original Andonic clan kept an unbroken line of leadership until the 27th generation, when no male offspring appeared among Sontad's immediate descendants. Rival males began to fight for the right to rule. Before the Andonic clan completely broke up, they had a well-developed language from their many years of communication. Their language grew almost daily because of innovation and adapting to their environment. Their language became the tongue of the early families of the earth until the later appearance of the colored races.

As time passed, the Andonic clan grew in number; friction and misunderstanding grew between the families. It seems the only thing that occupied their minds was hunting for food and fighting to avenge real or imaginary injustices from neighboring tribes. There were tremendous losses as family feuds increased and tribal warfare broke out. Some of the most valuable strains of ability and intelligence were lost to the world forever. In fact, the entire civilization was almost lost because of continuous clan warfare.

Higher Beings who have observed the development of life on millions of planets realize it is virtually impossible to get primitive men to live in peace. That is not difficult to understand; look at the so-called civilized people of today. We humans are descendants of

fighting animals, and when in close quarters we offend and irritate each other. The Life Carriers understand this and take steps to make amends, genetically providing for an eventual separation and development of humans into at least three, and more often six, distinct and separate races.

According to the Higher Beings, the descendants of Andon and Fonta found their way into Europe from the Middle East, and these Andonic tribes were the first to settle thousands of people along the Somme River of what is now France. The Somme River was unchanged by glaciers. The river is the same today as it was thousands of years ago. Those aboriginals of Urantia often dwelt in shelters of overhanging cliffs along the Somme River in hillside caves, where they enjoyed the comfort of their fires without being too inconvenienced by the smoke. They preferred to camp near the edge of the forest and beside the streams. They showed great skill in constructing stone sleeping quarters and dome-shaped stone huts that they crawled into at night. They closed the entrance to their shelter at night by rolling a stone in front of it. The rock to close the portal was placed inside the hut before they completed the roof.

The Andonites were fearless and successful hunters. Their entire diet consisted of meat except for wild berries and fruits. As Andon had invented the stone ax, his early descendants discovered and made great use of the throwing stick and harpoon. These early humans became very skillful in fashioning flint tools. They would travel many miles in search of flint. Flint had the same value for them as gold, platinum, and diamonds have for humans today. In many ways, the Andonic tribes displayed a degree of intelligence their ancestors had not reached in half a million years.

The early Andonites showed clannish disposition; they hunted in groups and never wandered very far from their caves. They seemed to realize they were a new type of creature, so they avoided becoming separated. Andon and Fonta worked hard to nurture their clan. They lived to the age of 42, when they both were killed during an earthquake by falling overhanging rocks. Five children and 11 grandchildren perished with them, and almost a score of their children suffered severe injuries. After the death of his parents, despite a severely injured foot, Sontad immediately took over leadership of the clan, assisted by his wife.

I contemplate the unbelievable struggle our ancient ancestors had to endure, and the untold pains and sorrows. I wonder if the twins ever asked themselves somewhere along the way, what is it all for? What is it that drives a person despite all circumstances? Great unseen forces drove our ancient ancestors. Here, I suggest we pause and try to get an understanding of what happened to Andon and Fonta after they left our plane of being. I quote from The Urantia Book. After quoting this section, I will attempt to clarify terms with which you may not be familiar.

The survival of Andon and Fonta

[63:7.1] Andon and Fonta, the splendid founders of the human race, received recognition at the time of the adjudication of Urantia upon the arrival of the Planetary Prince, and in due time they emerged from the regime of the mansion worlds with citizenship status on Jerusem. Although they have never been permitted to return to Urantia, they are cognizant of the history of the race they founded. They grieved over the Caligastia betrayal, sorrowed because of the Adamic failure, but rejoiced exceedingly when announcement was received that Michael [Jesus Christ] had selected their world as the theater for his final bestowal.

[63:7.2] On Jerusem both Andon and Fonta were fused with their Thought Adjusters, as also were several of their children, including Sontad, but the majority of even their immediate descendants only achieved Spirit fusion.

[63:7.3] Andon and Fonta, shortly after their arrival on Jerusem, received permission from the System Sovereign to return to the first mansion world to serve with the morontia personalities who welcome the pilgrims of time from Urantia to the heavenly spheres. And they have been assigned indefinitely to this service. They sought to send greetings to Urantia in connection with these revelations, but this request was wisely denied them.

[63:7.4] And this is the recital of the most heroic and fascinating chapter in all the history of Urantia, the story of the evolution, life struggles, death and eternal survival of the unique parents of all mankind.

Life after Death

In the quote above the Life Carrier states that Andon and Fonta received recognition at the time of the adjudication of Urantia upon the arrival of the Planetary Prince, the prince known in the heavenly worlds as Caligastia. Caligastia fell into sin when he joined the Lucifer Rebellion, and is the one Jesus referred to when he said: “Now is the judgment of this world: “Now shall the prince of this world be cast out.”

During the periodic adjudications of a planet new dispensations are adopted. Also at this time occurs the resurrection of the dead, when those who were in a suspended animation-like state receive new life and new bodies. Only the soul and personality (not the earthly body) survive resurrection. Some may be suspended for hundreds or thousands of years before they awaken; it seems to them they slept for but a moment. The sleeping souls are brought forth and given counsel, then sent to their proper place. Andon and Fonta went to the mansion worlds where they received instruction we cannot imagine even in our wildest fantasies, and they continue to evolve. Those mansion worlds are no doubt the ones Jesus was talking about when he said in John 14:2, “In my Father’s house are many mansions.”

According to the Higher Beings, there are seven mansion worlds we humans must traverse after departing from earth, if we survive. It is my belief these mansion worlds are the same places humans have experienced in Near Death Experiences (NDEs), reporting beautiful places from which they didn’t want to return to earth. People who have had an NDE claim the beautiful beings they saw told them that after our demise we visit those worlds and continue evolving.

In The Urantia Book, while Jesus was ordaining his apostles, he seems to reference the near death experience. [140:3.1] *Now that you are ambassadors of my Father’s Kingdom. And further down Jesus states: It is not enough that you live as you were before this hour, but henceforth must you live as those who tasted the glories of a better life and have been sent back to earth as ambassadors of the Sovereign of that new and better world.* This information was recorded around 1934, way before the academics started their investigation of the strange phenomenon of NDE. Today many people are writing about their NDEs. A good example is a neurosurgeon, Dr. Eben Alexander. He contracted a disease that put him in a coma for five or six days sometime in 2008, and he had an NDE. He wrote an excellent book after his experience titled *Proof of Heaven*. All of these people who returned to life on earth have tried to explain that there is no death as we understand it—that life is a continuum. We are here on earth to spiritualize our minds. Choosing to do God’s will is the secret to survival and perfection in survival.

After the twins had finished their education on the seven Mansion Worlds, they proceeded to Jerusem, which is the headquarters world of Satania, our local system of a thousand planets, once ruled by Lucifer.

On Jerusem Andon and Fonta fused with their Thought Adjusters (the God within). Once a person has fused with their Thought Adjuster he/she is indeed a child of God, an ascendant spiritual being. There is little chance of failing to survive after fusion. Andon and

Fonta were the first two people on earth to receive Thought Adjusters (a fragment of God the Spirit within).

[112:5.12] There is something real, something of human evolution, something additional to the Mystery Monitor, which survives death. This newly appearing entity is the soul, and it survives the death of both your physical body and the material mind. This entity is the conjoint child of the combined life and efforts of the human you in liaison with the divine you, the Adjuster. This child of human and divine parentage constitutes the surviving element of terrestrial origin: it is the morontia self, the immortal soul.

[112:5.13] This child of persisting meaning and surviving value is wholly unconscious during the period from death to repersonalization and is in the keeping of the seraphic destiny guardian throughout this season of waiting. You will not function as a conscious being, following death, until you attain the new consciousness of morontia on the mansion world of Satania.

{112:6.1] Just as a butterfly emerges from the caterpillar stage, so will the true real personalities of human beings emerge on the mansion worlds, for the first time revealed apart from their one-time enshrinement in the material flesh. On the first mansion world, we ascending humans receive our first morontia body (material, spiritual, and mindal).

Many believe the soul enters the body at birth. However according to The Urantia Book, the personality is born with the body at birth; the soul develops with life experience.

The soul and the spirit of God within are the main reason for the commandment “Thou shall not kill.” People do not realize the negative energy they accumulate and must answer for when they disregard this law. We need to pay more attention to the requirements of God; ignorance is no excuse. You reap what you sow. Here is what the Higher Beings have to say about the subject. In this quote, the morontial self is the soul. Morontia life is that phase of universe reality between the material and the spiritual realms.

[108:6.6] And as you are the human parent, so is the Adjuster the divine parent of the real you, your higher and advancing self, your better morontial and future spiritual self. And it is this evolving morontial soul that the judges and censors discern when they decree your survival and pass you upward to new worlds and never-ending existence in eternal liaison with your faithful partner—God, the Adjuster.

[108:6.7] The Adjusters are the eternal ancestors, the divine originals, of your evolving immortal souls; they are the unceasing urge that leads man to attempt mastery of the material and present existence in the light of the spiritual and future career. The Monitors are the prisoners of undying hope, the founts of everlasting progression. And how they do enjoy communicating with their subjects in more or less direct channels! How they rejoice when they can dispense with symbols and other methods of indirection and flash their message straight to the intellects of their human partners!

[108:2.1 [The Adjusters] ... are not actually assigned until the human subjects make their first moral personality decision. The first moral choice of the human child....Adjusters reach their human subjects on Urantia, on the average, just prior to the sixth birthday.”

As I analyze and ponder the concept of those Higher Beings, their ideas and in-depth psychological analysis of humanity make a great deal of sense to me. Our first moral decision (right vs. wrong, good vs. bad) brings us to our Thought Adjuster, who beckons us throughout our life to build our better self, our better morontial and future spiritual self, so that we may survive the death of our earthly body and proceed to the Mansion Worlds.

The Mansion Worlds are not our final destination. We continue evolving until we reach Paradise where the ultimate resides. Andon and Fonta were granted special permission to return to the first Mansion World to welcome pilgrims from Urantia to the

heavenly spheres. Can you imagine the first parents of all humanity greeting you as you awaken on the heavenly worlds to begin our ascending universe career?

According to the Higher Beings, there are seven stages of our ascending universe career. After death, all survivors go to sleep and awaken on the Mansion Worlds. The only difference—some sleep longer than others. Of the seven stages, I will quote the second and seventh stages. There are unique details in those two stages you shouldn't miss. I wouldn't want to miss them. I am inclined to believe that for humans to traverse those seven stages after life on earth could take millions of years, but we will have until eternity.

Sleeping survivors

[30:4.4] All mortals of survival status, in the custody of personal guardians of destiny, pass through the portals of natural death and, on the third period, personalize on the mansion worlds. Those accredited beings who have, for any reason, been unable to attain that level of intelligence mastery and endowment of spirituality which would entitle them to personal guardians, cannot thus immediately and directly go to the mansion worlds. Such surviving souls must rest in unconscious sleep until the judgment day of a new epoch, a new dispensation, the coming of a Son of God to call the rolls of the age and adjudicate the realm, and this is the general practice throughout all Nebadon. It was said of Christ Michael that, when he ascended on high at the conclusion of his work on earth, "He led a great multitude of captives." And these captives were the sleeping survivors from the days of Adam to the day of the Master's resurrection on Urantia.

[30:4.5] The passing of time is of no moment to sleeping mortals; they are wholly unconscious and oblivious to the length of their rest. On reassembly of the personality at the end of an age, those who have slept five thousand years will react no differently than those who have rested five days. Aside from this time delay these survivors pass on through the ascension regime identically with those who avoid the longer or shorter sleep of death.

[30:4.6] These dispensational classes of world pilgrims are utilized for group morontia activities in the work of the local universes. There is a great advantage in the mobilization of such enormous groups: they are thus kept together for long periods of effective service.

Paradise Arrivals

[30:4.27] On reaching Paradise with residential status, you begin the progressive course in divinity and absonity. Your residence on Paradise signifies that you have found God, and that you are to be mustered into the Mortal Corps of the Finality. Of all the creatures of the grand universe, only those who are Father fused are mustered into the Mortal Corps of the Finality. Only such individuals take the finaliter oath. Other beings of Paradise perfection or attainment may be temporarily attached to this finality corps, but they are not of eternal assignment to the unknown and unrevealed mission of this accumulating host of the evolutionary and perfected veterans of time and peace.

[30:4.25] Paradise arrivals are accorded a period of freedom, after which they begin their associations with the seven groups of primary supernaphim. They are designated Paradise graduates when they have finished their course with the conductors of worship and then, as finaliters, are assigned on observational and co-operative service to the ends of the far-flung creation. As yet there seems to be no specific or settled employment for the Mortal Corps of Finaliters, though they serve in many capacities on worlds settled in light and life.

[30:4.26] If there should be no future or unrevealed destiny for the Mortal Corps of the Finality, the present assignment of these ascendant beings would be altogether adequate and glorious. Their present destiny wholly justifies the universal plan of evolutionary ascent. But the future age of the evolution of the spheres of outer space will undoubtedly further elaborate,

and with more repleteness divinely illuminate, the wisdom and loving-kindness of the Gods in the execution of their divine plan of human survival and mortal ascension.

With the knowledge of The Urantia Book, we can prepare ourselves for our next existence in the Mansion Worlds, the worlds that Jesus mentioned in John 14:2. We will traverse those mansions and progress to higher realms. There our joy will exceed our understanding.

Chapter 2

When Higher Beings Came to Earth

One Million Years Ago

The Urantia Book states that our ancient ancestors became humans around one million years ago after a lengthy process of mutating through the animal stages. At this time the Spirit of God came and indwelt the first two human beings. The heaven or higher worlds called the male Andon and the female Fonta.

When the Spirit of God came and indwelt in the first two human beings, they were no longer considered just animals but human beings. They were distinguished from their animal parents because they were able to think for themselves and make their own decisions, not rely on instincts alone. Those two beings were born suddenly from animal parents. Again there were no missing links, say *The Urantia Book*. Becoming human was planted into the twins original ancestors DNA millions of years before. *The Urantia Book* mentioned that animals don't have a soul, they are not able to know God.

After the Spirit of God came and indwelt in the mind of humanity, the soul was created. The God within and the essence of the human being are the creators of the soul; they are the soul parents as mentioned before. [108:6.6] *And as you are the human parent, so is the Adjuster (the God within) the divine parent of the real you, your higher and advancing self, your better morontial and future spiritual self. And it is this evolving morontial soul that the judges and censors discern when they decree your survival and pass you upward to new worlds and never-ending existence in eternal liaison with your faithful partner — God, the Adjuster.*

The Urantia Book calls the God within the Thought Adjuster. The Thought Adjuster directs our minds in the right direction if we allow it to do so. Everything the Thought Adjuster does we have to give our consent in some way we don't fully understand. We are never forced to do God's will. Genesis 1:26, of the *Bible*, states: "Let us make man in our image after our likeness." The likeness refers to the God within, not the physical body. When the individuals develop to a certain degree in their evolving and become one with the God within then, they will be in the likeness of God and his higher Sons. Jesus said: in John 17:11 "That they may be one as we are one." Jesus was one with God.

Genesis 1:27 states: "So God created man in his image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them." He created male and female equal in the beginning, no rib mentioned. I believe the Jewish scribes added the rib section to the *Bible*. Today we know in the modern world a man has the same amount of ribs as women.

The Higher Beings tell us the first one of our humanity who fused with their Thought Adjuster (the God within) was Enoch. In the *Bible*, Genesis 5:24, it mentions: "And Enoch walked with God: and he was not, for God took him." After this strange experience in the *Bible*, no one ever heard from Enoch again. When one fuses with the God within, he/she becomes an entirely new person. If someone happens to merge with the God within while still on the planet, their body will be annihilated consumed in fire.

It is a long trek for humanity and his spiritual developed, to the human mind this may take a long time, but to the Higher Being that exists for millions of years, it is relatively

short. Most humans are not evolved enough to fuse with their Thought Adjuster (the God within), but when they reach the higher worlds, they will have plenty of time.

The Origin of the Color Races

[Paper 64] Around 500 thousand years after the appearance on earth of the first two humans, Andon and Fonta, the races of color appeared. Six different colors of children appeared in the same family, the Sangik family. At this time people called the Bandonan of the northwestern Highland of India was involved in another tribal struggle which they had many times before. More than 100 years this warfare persisted. When the long battle was over only about 100 families were left. The survivors were the most intelligent and desirable of all the living descendants of Andon and Fonta, the first two humans on our planet. About this time a strange thing began to occur. A couple living in the northwestern part of the Highland region of India suddenly started to produce unusually intelligent children. They were called the Sangik family, the ancestors of all the colored races on the planet. This couple had 19 children in all. Not only did these children have above average intelligence, but their skin also had a unique tendency to change color when exposed to sunlight. Among these 19 children, there were five Red, two Orange, four Yellow, two Green, four Blue, and two Indigo. Those colors became more outstanding as the children aged. When they later mated with their fellow tribesperson, all of their offsprings tended to inherit the colors of the Sangik parent.

At the same time, the color races were coming into existence; another phenomenon was taking place. The one called the prince of this world (whom I mentioned earlier) appeared on our planet. All this was taking place around 500 thousand years after the twins, Andon and Fonta, the first two humans on our planet were born.

The Higher Beings informed us that it was most unusual for the evolutionary races of color to appear all at once and mainly in one family. According to those Higher Beings, the races of color usually appeared one after the other in different families. The Red race, being the first to evolve, roamed the planet for many years before the other races made their appearances.

1. The Red Race. It's said that the red race was remarkable; they were in many ways more advanced than Andon and Fonta. They were the most intelligent of the Sangik group and were the first of the Sangik children to develop tribal civilization and government. They were always monogamous. In later years, they had severe and prolonged problems with their Yellow brethren in Asia. They were helped by their invention of the bow and arrow. The Redman had unfortunately inherited the tendency of their ancestors to fight among themselves. It weakened them so that the Yellowman was able to push them off the continent of Asia.

Around 85 thousand years ago, an almost pure group of the Red tribe went across to North America. Soon afterward, the Bering Land Strait sank, isolating them. No member of the Red race ever returned to Asia. But they are left behind quite a legacy of their stock in Siberia, China, Central Asia, India, and Europe.

When the Redman crossed over to North America, they took with them many of the teachings and traditions of their early origin. The Red man's immediate ancestors were in touch and familiar with the world headquarters of the planetary prince. But soon after reaching North America, the Red tribes forgot the teachings of their fore-parents, and there occurred a decline in their intellectual and spiritual culture. It wasn't long after reaching North America that the Redman returned to fighting fiercely among themselves. It appears these tribal wars were going to cause the extinction of this remnant of the comparatively pure Red race. Because of this retrogression, it seemed imminent that the Red race was heading

for destruction. Around 65 thousand years ago, Onamonolonton appeared as their leader and spiritual deliverer. He brought temporary peace to these Americans, and he revived their worship of the Great Spirit. Onamonolonton lived to be 96 years old. His headquarters located among the magnificent redwood trees of California. Many of his later descendants have come down in our times as the Blackfoot Indians. As time passed, the teachings of Onamonolonton became something of the past. The Redman resumed his self-destructive warfare. After reaching America from Asia, the North America Red race never again encountered any other world influence (except the Eskimo) until later discovered by the White man. The Redman could not rule the White man, and he would not willingly serve him.

2. The Orange Race. The most peculiar thing about the orange race was their unique desire to build. They would build any and everything. They would make huge mounds of stone to see which tribe could create the most massive mound. The Orange race was not a progressive people. They profited from the school of the prince and sent groups there for training. Therefore, the Orange race was the first to follow the coast south to Africa, and westward by way of the Mediterranean Sea. But they never secured a place to stay in Africa and were wiped out of existence by the green man. Before their demise, these people lost the culture and spiritual place they had acquired. There was a great revival of higher learning around 300 thousand years ago because of the great leadership of Porshunta. Porshunta was the mastermind of those unfortunate people. He ministered to his people when their headquarters were at Armageddon, a mountain region in the Middle East. The last outstanding struggle between the Green and the Orange man took place around the area of the lower Nile Valley in Egypt. A lengthy battle waged for almost 100 years. Afterward, there were very few of the orange race left. The scattered remnants absorbed by the Green race and the later arriving Indigo race. As a race, the Orange people disappeared around 100 thousand years ago.

3. The Yellow Race. The primitive yellow tribes were the first ones to give up the chase or packing up and following the herd. They were the first to establish settled communities and develop a home life based on agriculture. Intellectually, they were not as smart as the Red race, although socially, they proved themselves more intelligent than all the Sangik races. They did not kill off their people as most of the other races did. Their culture evolved and fostered civilization. Because they developed various methods of living together in relative peace, they were able to drive the Red race out of Asia as they expanded their territory.

They traveled far from the influence of what was known then as the spiritual headquarters of the world. It was in this area of Mesopotamia where Caligastia the prince of this world established his settlement. The Yellow race drifted into great darkness during the time of Lucifer and Caligastia's rebellion. But there was a period when the Yellow race saw a little light. About 100 thousand years ago, a great man of their tribe, known as Singlongton, became the leader. He proclaimed the worship of the one Truth. The survival of such a large number of the yellow race is due to their intertribal peacefulness. Since the time of their great leader Singlongton to modern times, the Yellow race known as the more peaceful nation on earth.

4. The Green Race. The Green race is said to have been the least able of the primitive races. Their constant migration in different directions weakened them. But before their dispersion, their tribes experienced a great revival of their culture around 300 thousand years ago due to the leadership of the one they called Fantad.

The Green race split into three major divisions: the northern tribes were subdued, enslaved and absorbed by the Blue and Yellow race; the eastern group merged with the Indian people of that time; and the tribes that were in the south entered Africa, where they destroyed their almost equally inferior Orange cousins. In many ways, the Green and Orange

men was evenly matched. Both carried the strains of the giant, and many of their leaders were eight and nine feet in height. The giant strains of the Green race mostly confined to the area now known as Egypt. The Green race left over was absorbed by the Indigo race. The Indigo race was the last of the color race to leave from the original Sangik center where the races initially dispersed.

5. The Blue Race. According to the Higher Beings that sponsored these papers, the Blue race was a great race. They invented the spear and worked out the basics of many of the arts of modern civilization. The Blue race was said to have the brainpower of the Red race and the soul sentiments of the Yellow race. The early blue race responded to the teachings of Prince Caligastia and his staff but then fell into great confusion after the betrayal of Caligastia and the majority of his team. Like most of the primitive race, they never fully recovered from the turmoil caused by the Caligastia downfall, nor did they completely overcome their tendency to fight among themselves.

Around 500 years after the downfall of Caligastia, there was a widespread revival of learning and religion, which was somewhat primitive, but real and beneficial. The leader of this revival named Orlandof; he became a great teacher among the Blue race. Orlandof led many of his tribes back to the worship of the true God under the name of the Super Chief. It was the most significant advancement of the Blue race until the later days when they received biological improvement from the Adamic stock.

The European researchers and explorers of the Old Stone Age have mostly dealt with unearthing the tools, bones and art crafts in places like the caves in Lascaux France, left behind by the Blue race or Cro-Magnon that stayed in Europe until relatively recent times. The so-called White races are the descendant of the blue race, modified by a slight mixture of the Yellow and Red race, and they were up-stepped by assimilating portions of the Violet race. (Adam and Eve started the Violet race. One of their primary purposes for coming to our planet was to uplift the human race biologically, but because of their default, humans has suffered immensely.)

When I started reading paper 64 concerning the evolutionary races of color, I was a little skeptical about accepting its different colors. I then had to rely on my memory. I recalled the Hindu Indians for thousands of years depicting their many gods as being Blue, and according to *The Urantia Book*, a remnant of the Blue race invaded India thousands of years ago after they were uplifted biologically by the Violet race. Because they were so far advanced in comparison to Badonon offspring, they no doubt considered them as gods. I sincerely believe the Blue race started the caste system after entering India many years ago after the Violet race uplifted their genes.

While I pondered the different color races, reminded of a birthmark I have on my left thigh, most of the time it has a pinkish color, my complexion is tan. This birthmark is about three inches long and around two inches wide. When I am chilly, for example, after taking a shower, the birthmark turns a soft violet color. I know that color couldn't appear on my body unless already embedded in my DNA. After seeing my skin turn violet, I then realized that it is a high possibility that there could have been that color race on our planet. Sometimes now since reading *The Urantia Book*, I look at my birthmark when it is a violet color, and I wonder if it's an indication that part of my root's stems from the Violet race. The Red race, the North America Indian, the yellow people of China, and the Indigo Races of Africa, are still with us; this is all that's left of the original six color races.

6. The Indigo Race. The section that disturbs most people, especially people of color, and because of it, they reject the entire Urantia book, denying themselves a great opportunity to expand their state of consciousness to understand higher dimensions. However, I admit that

when I first read paper 64, it bothered me until I tried to distinguish it from those Higher Beings' point of view. Since this section is so controversial, I feel compelled to quote it:

[64:6.25] *As the Redman was the most advanced of all the Sangik people, so the black men were the least progressive, they were the last to migrate from their homeland homes. They journey to Africa, taking possession of the continent, and have ever since remained there except when they have been forcibly taken away, from age to age, as slaves.*

Isolated in Africa, the Indigo race made little advance until the days of Orvonon, when they experienced a great spiritual awakening. While they later almost entirely forgot the "God of Gods" proclaimed by Orvonon, they did not entirely lose the desire to worship the unknown; at least they maintained a form of worship up to a few thousand years ago.

Notwithstanding their backwardness, these Indigo people have exactly the same standing before the celestial as any other earthly race.

This is the story of how people of color appeared on our planet. If one just picked up *The Urantia Book* and started reading paper 64 on people of color, they would conclude that the so-called Higher Beings are prejudiced. Because of our preconditioned racial attitudes, we read more into this paper than the Higher Beings intended when they planted the seeds of life in the primordial oceans. They planned to bring forth creatures that had a will of their own, and that would be able to think and make decisions and develop a state of consciousness that one day would be able to rise up into higher dimensions. They were not concerned about our petty racial attitudes.

In an ordinary human family where there are several children, there is always usually one child more intelligent than the rest of their siblings, but it doesn't mean that they are better than the rest of the children. The human race is nothing but a huge family, whether we understand it or not. People tend to pick out what they don't like about paper 64 and make an issue of it. But if they read the entire book, they would find statements such as [82:6.2] *Of the six Sangik races there were primary and there were secondary. Though the primary races blue, red, and yellow were in many respects superior to the three secondary peoples; it should be remembered that these secondary races had many desirable traits which would have considerably enhanced the primary people if their better strains could have been absorbed.* [82:6.10] *Biologically considered, the secondary Sangik were in some respect superior to the primary races. And they continued, After all the real jeopardy of the human species is to be found in the unrestrained multiplication of the inferior and degenerated strains of the various civilized people rather than in any supposed danger of their interbreeding.*

[32:3.10] *The fact of animal evolutionary origin does not attach stigma to any personality in the sight of the universe as that is the exclusive method of producing one of two basic types of finite intelligent will creatures. When the heights of perfection and eternity are attained, all the more honor to those who began at the bottom and joyfully climbed the ladder of life, round by round, and who when they do reach the heights of glory, will have gained a personal experience which embodies an actual knowledge of every phase of life from bottom to top.*

In all this is shown the wisdom of the creators. It would be just as easy for the Universal Father to make all mortal perfect brings, to impart perfection by his divine word. But that would deprive them of the wonderful experience of the adventure and training associated with the long and gradual inward climb an experience to be had only by those who are so fortunate as to begin at the very bottom of living existence.

Since the year 2003 and the decoding of the human genome, scientists have found that many darker skinned people are sometimes more European than some whites are and vice-versa. The scientists are also saying that the DNA of all races are 99.9 percent the same. It was brought out in scientific research that the difference is only skin deep. *The Urantia Book*

states: [111:7.4] *The higher human races of Urantia are complexly admixed; they are a blend of many races and stocks of different origin. Also, [82:6.5] Hybridization of superior and dissimilar stocks is the secret of the creation of new and more vigorous strains. And this is true of plants, animals, and the human species. Hybridization augments vigor and fertility. Race mixture of the average or superior strata of various people greatly increases creative potential, as is shown in the present population of the United States of North America.*

In *The Urantia Book*, they mention that the last will be first and the first last. If we look at the *Bible*, we will find in Luke 13:30 Jesus refers to the Kingdom of Heaven. He mentioned that in time, the last would be first. I plead with those that are true seekers; *The Urantia Book* has excellent information about our Heavenly Father and our future goals. Do not cut off your nose to spite your face. Some of us fail to comprehend, in comparison to the angels and higher beings, that we are “all” at the bottom of the ladder. I don’t see anything that would make us so proud. When we reach our goal, then we will have something to “kick-up our heels about.”

Furthermore, this is what Jesus had to say about the subject while talking to one of his young friends: One day while resting at lunch, about halfway to Tarentum, Ganid asked Jesus a direct question as to what he thought of India’s caste system. Jesus said: [133 paragraph 3] *Though human beings differ in many ways, the one from another, before God and in the spiritual world all mortals stand on an equal footing. There are only two groups of mortals in the eyes of God: those who desire to do his will and those who do not. As the universe looks upon an inhabited world, it likewise discerns two great classes: those who know God and those who do not. Those who cannot know God are reckoned among the animals of any given realm. Mankind can appropriately be divided into many classes in accordance with differing qualifications, as they may be viewed physically, mentally, socially, vocationally, or morally, but as these different classes of mortals appear before the judgment bar of God, they stand on an equal footing; God is truly no respecter of persons. Although you cannot escape the recognition of differential human abilities and endowments in matters intellectual, social, and moral, you should make no such distinctions in the spiritual brotherhood of men when assembled for worship in the presence of God.*

Urantia’s Planetary Prince, Caligastia

About 500,000 years ago, at the same time, the Sangik races of color were appearing, a brilliant spiritual being named Caligastia arrived on Urantia with a corps of assistants and administrative helpers to serve as the Planetary Prince of our world. (Caligastia is the prince Jesus spoke of in John 16:11: “The prince of this world is judged.” But let us not get ahead of our story.) Caligastia belonged to an order of local universe Sons who are certified by Melchizedeks, assigned to various duties by System Sovereigns, and eventually commissioned as Planetary Princes and sent forth to rule the evolving inhabited worlds. The task of the Planetary Prince is to organize and administer the inhabited spheres like Urantia, and to prepare the way for the coming of the Material Son and Daughter, the Adam and Eve, the biologic and cultural uplifters. All Planetary Princes serve under the universe administrative jurisdiction of Gabriel, the chief executive of Michael (known on Urantia as Jesus Christ), ruler of the universe of Nebadon.

At the head of Caligastia’s corps of assistants and administrators served another local universe Son named Daligastia, the associate-assistant of the Planetary Prince. The Planetary Prince’s staff included many angels and a host of other celestial beings who came to advance humanity’s interests and promote the welfare of the human races.

The Caligastia 100

From our human standpoint, Melchizedek who wrote Paper 66 says the most interesting of those who came to our planet were the corporeal members of the Prince's staff, often referred to as the Caligastia 100. These rematerialized members of the Prince's staff were chosen by Caligastia himself from 785,000 ascendant citizens of Jerusem who volunteered for the adventure on Urantia. The Caligastia 100 were citizens of Jerusem temporarily detached from their Thought Adjusters, who waited for them to return to Jerusem. The Caligastia 100 had gone through the experience of the mansion worlds of which Jesus spoke in John 14:2: "In my Father's house are many mansions." Each one of the chosen 100 hailed from different planets, and none were originally from Urantia.

In Genesis 6:4 we read: "There were giants in the earth in those days; and also, after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men and bare children unto them some became mighty men that were of old, men of renown." Those sons of God are the same ones the Sumerians called Anunnaki (those who from heaven came). For them to engender children by humans, they had to have bodies with human genes.

The Caligastia 100 could not use the bodies they used on the system capital. Bodies had to be created for them by volunteer surgeons from Avalon, a neighboring universe. The Avalon Commission extracted DNA from the most advanced descendants of Andon and Fonta and transferred this life plasm into material bodies created for the Caligastia 100. Without material bodies, the tribes of the earth would not have been able to see them. The Caligastia 100 incarnated into these bodies and became living beings, just as we incarnated into our bodies a little before we were born.

We human Urantians were never able to see the Planetary Prince or his assistant, Daligastia; they stayed in a higher dimension where humans could not see them. But after their materialization the Caligastia 100 could see the Prince and his assistant.

[66:2.5] *These Jerusemite volunteers were brought by seraphic transport directly from the system capital to Urantia, (earth), and upon arrival they were held enseraphimed until they could be provided with personality forms of the dual nature of special planetary service, literal bodies consisting of flesh and blood but also attuned to the life circuits of the system. The system of Satania (consists of 1,000 planets that Lucifer once ruled as System Sovereign.*

Seraphic Transporters

In Ezekiel, Chapter 1, Ezekiel describes seeing a wheel intersecting a wheel that moved when the mighty seraphim moved. According to *The Urantia Book* [39:5.10] angels known as seraphim act as transporters, and that may be what Ezekiel saw.

[39:5.10] Those transported are enseraphimed beings. Seraphic transporters visit different planets as guests while maintaining custody of their enseraphimed beings. They visit after having traveled across light-years of space. According to *The Urantia Book* many seraphim are stationed on our planet. They have a higher vibration than we mortals can perceive.

The Higher Beings say our conventional ideas about angels are derived in the following manner: [39:5.11] *During moments just prior to physical death a reflective phenomenon sometimes occurs in the human mind, and this dimming consciousness seems to visualize something of the form of the attending angel.* This vision is translated into the human concept of angels, and some survive to tell their story of a near death experience. [39:5.12] *The erroneous idea that angels possess wings is not wholly due to olden notions that they must have wings to fly through the air. Human beings have sometimes been permitted to observe seraphim that were being prepared for transport service. In observing a transport seraphim being made*

ready to receive a passenger for interplanetary transit, there may be seen what are apparently double sets of wings extending from the head to the foot of the angel. In reality these wings are energy insulators—friction shields.

The transport seraphim literally become a carriage of life. [39:5.13] *When celestial beings are to be enseraphimed for transfer from one world to another, they . . . are inducted into the transport sleep. Meantime, the transport seraphim move into a horizontal position immediately above the universe energy pole of the planet. [These energy fields are on the verge of being discovered by our scientists, and they are called energy grids.] While the energy shields are wide open, the sleeping personality is skillfully deposited, by the officiating seraphic assistants, directly on top of the transport angel. Then both the upper and lower pairs of shields are carefully closed and adjusted.*

At this time, under the influence of transformers and transmitters, a strange metamorphosis begins as the seraphim is made ready to swing into the energy currents of the universe circuits. To outward appearance the seraphim grows pointed at both ends and becomes enclosed in an odd light of amber hue. The transport seraphim and the enseraphimed personality look like one being. When all is ready for departure, the chief transporter makes the final inspection of the carriage of life; he carries out the test to make sure the angel is encircuited correctly, then he announces the traveler is properly enseraphimed, that the two beings are insulated, and everything is ready for the departing flash.

Two mechanical controllers then take their positions. The transport angel has become a transparent vibrating torpedo-like shaped outline of glistening luminosity. During this moment, the transport dispatcher of the realm summons the auxiliary batteries of living energy, usually 1,000 in number, and announces the destination of the transport. The transport dispatcher reaches out and touches the closest point of the seraphim carriage of life, which shoots forward with lightning speed leaving a trail of celestial luminosity. In less than ten minutes, the breathtaking spectacle will be lost even to the reinforced seraphim vision.

Transport seraphim move across light years of space in a short time. We in the physical world cannot imagine how fast spiritual beings can travel. The Urantia Book states that seraphim travel at around 559,000 miles per second, an unbelievable speed. Imagine that when we have progressed through the mansion worlds, we ourselves will be enseraphimed for our journeys to higher worlds! When I read in quantum physics that there are electrons that react instantaneously to other particles that are light-years apart, I realized how little we humans know. Urantian scientists are just beginning to understand how the universe works.

The Melchizedek mentioned that before the arrival of these 100 Jerusem citizens, two supervising Life Carriers who resided on earth (in a higher dimension) had previously perfected their plan to petition Jerusem and Edentia (Edentia is constellation headquarters) for permission to transplant the life plasma of 100 selected survivors of Andon and Fonta stock into 100 material bodies created for the corporeal members of the Prince's staff. The request was granted on Jerusem and approved on Edentia. We humans may wonder about this technique, that in 10 days the Caligastia 100 had human bodies created by advanced surgeons from Avalon.

Because the bodies of the Caligastia 100 were made with human life plasm, the Caligastia 100 were able to procreate with humans. We humans must take into consideration that the Caligastia 100 had already passed through a world of time and space like Urantia and had experienced the seven mansion worlds. They had similar experiences to Andon and Fonta and had Thought Adjusters although they were not yet Adjuster-fused. They were citizens of Jerusem, headquarters of the local system then called Satania. All they had to do was agree to incarnate into bodies provided for them.

Although such events seem unbelievable to us, we should remember that these Higher

Beings have highly developed capabilities because their civilizations are a billion years old. Look at what our scientists have accomplished in the last 30 years: cloning, genetic engineering and the cracking of the DNA code of the human genome. Because some of us humans have a limited scientific and spiritual understanding, we tend not to believe what other more advanced civilizations can do.

The Life Carriers chose 50 male and 50 female Andonites who represented the survival of the best strains of that unique race. They were assembled from widely separated places by exceptional means and gathered at the Planetary Prince's headquarters where the 100 humans gave themselves into the hands of highly skilled volunteers commissioned from Avalon who supervised the material extraction of a portion of the life plasma of Andon and Fonta's descendants. This living plasma than was transferred into the material bodies constructed for the use of the 100 Jerusemite members of the prince's staff.

The Melchizedek tells us that this transaction, along with the literal creation of bodies for the Caligastia 100, spawned numerous legends. These legends become confused with later traditions concerning the way Adam and Eve's bodies materialized on our planet.

The Planetary Prince's headquarters was in the Persian Gulf area; later, this region was called Mesopotamia. The climate and landscape were favorable for the Prince, his staff, and assistants. The Mesopotamian environment today is very different. It was necessary to have a pleasant atmosphere to induce primitive humans to take specific initial steps toward culture and civilization.

The Dalamatian Civilization

According to The Urantia Book, the headquarters of the Planetary Prince was a beautiful but straightforward city enclosed by walls 40 feet high. This world center of culture was called Dalamatia, in honor of Daligastia, Caligastia's assistant. The town was laid out in 10 subdivisions with the headquarters mansions of 10 councils for the corporeal staff situated at the center of these subdivisions. At the very center of Dalamatia was the temple of the unseen Father. The administrative headquarters of the prince and his staff were arranged in 12 chambers surrounding the temple itself. Those sons of God the Sumerians Anunnaki created the first advanced civilizations on earth.

The buildings at Dalamatia were all one-story structures, except for the council headquarters, which was two stories high. The temple of the unseen Father of All was a small building three stories high. The city, made of bricks, represented the best architecture of that era. The surrounding tribes significantly improved their home building and village construction thanks to Dalmatia's example.

Close to the Prince's headquarters lived representatives of all the colors of the human races of that period. The students for the Prince's schools were recruited from nearby tribes. Although these early schools were crude, they provided all they could do for the humans of that age.

The prince's corporeal staff regularly gathered about them superior individuals from the surrounding tribes, and after teaching and inspiring these students, sent them back as teachers and leaders of their tribes. The arrival of the prince's staff made a great impression on these primitive tribes. It took almost 1,000 years for news of the Planetary Prince and his team to spread abroad. The tribes near the Mesopotamian headquarters were tremendously inspired by the teachings and conduct of these 100 volunteer sojourners on our planet earth. Much human mythology grew out of the legends of those early days when members of the prince's staff were personalized on Urantia as superhumans. Keep in mind they were the sons of God of Genesis 6:4 the Anunnaki.

The Melchizedek writes that a severe handicap to the excellent influence of such extra-planetary help is the tendency of mortals to regard extraplanetary helpers as gods. Aside from the technique of their appearance on earth, the Caligastia 100, 50 men and 50 women, did not rely on supernatural powers or superhuman manipulation.

These 100 members of the prince's staff were divided equally as to sex according to their previous mortal status. Each of the 100 could become parents to a new order of physical beings, but they were instructed that they could only have children under certain circumstances.

The Caligastia 100 ate the same food as the people of earth, only with this difference: the recreated bodies of this group were satisfied by a non-flesh diet. For this reason they located their residence in a warm region that had many trees and shrubs that produced nuts and fruits. The practice of subsisting on non-flesh dates to the times of the Caligastia 100; this custom spread near and far and affected the eating habits of many surrounding tribes.

According to The Urantia Book, the Caligastia 100 were personally immortal; they were undying. Circulating through their material form were the antidotal complements of the life currents of the system that were provided by Tree of Life, a shrub of Edentia that was transported to Urantia. Had they not lost contact with system life circuits through rebellion, they would have lived on indefinitely until the arrival of Adam and Eve, or until they were later released to resume their interrupted journey to Havona and Paradise. (Havona, the central and divine universe, is an eternal wholly created, and perfect planetary family containing one billion worlds arranged in seven concentric circuits contiguous to and surrounding Paradise, the ultimate heaven and home of the Father of All.)

The antidotal complements of the Satania life current derived from the fruit of the Tree of Life, a shrub of Edentia which was sent to earth by the Most Highs of Norlatiadek at the time of Caligastia arrival.

Our planet, Urantia (earth), is commonly referred to as 606 of Satania in Norlatiadek of Nebadon, meaning the six hundred and six inhabited world in the local system of Satania, situated in the constellation of Norlatiadek, one of the one hundred constellations of the local universe of Nebadon.

In those days of Dalamatia, this tree grew in the central courtyard of the temple of the unseen Father. And it was the fruit of the Tree of Life that enabled the material and otherwise mortal beings of the Prince's staff to live on indefinitely, so long as they had access to this Tree of Life. While of no value to the mortal evolutionary races, this super-substance was quite sufficient to confer eternal life upon the Caligastia 100 and the modified Andonites associated with them. The Andonites who contributed their human germ plasm to the members of the Prince's staff had introduced into their mortal bodies the complement of the system circuits by the Avalon surgeons and thus were able to live concurrently with the Prince's staff, century after century, in defiance of physical death. After a while, the 100 Andonites were told of their contribution to the new forms of their superiors. These same 100 from the Andon tribe remained at headquarters as personal attendants of the prince's corporeal staff.

After the rebellion, access to the Tree of Life was denied the 60 rebels of the Caligastia 100; they eventually died. But the loyal 40 of the Caligastia 100 continued to use the Tree of Life until they finally left the planet and returned to Jerusem.

Paper 66 of The Urantia Book describes the organization of planetary government: The Caligastia 100 were organized to serve in 10 groups of 10, ten councils with ten members each. When two or more of these councils met in joint session, they were presided over by Daligastia, Caligastia right-hand man.

1 . The first of these councils was the Council on Food. This council was presided over by one of the 100, named Ang. This council helped the primitive human's interest in food, water, and clothes; this Council enhanced the material aspects of life for those primitive humans. They taught them how to dig wells, spring control, and irrigation. They were shown methods for the treatment of animal skin for clothing. Somewhere in the process, early humans were taught how to weave. New ways were instructed to store food. They even learned to preserve food by cooking, drying, and smoking. This food became early man's first property, and they learned to cope with the hazards of famine.

2. The second council dealt with animal domestication and utilization. The tasks of this council were the breeding and taming of animals to help man bear his burden and for transportation. Careful breeding became a valuable source of food such as cheese, butter, and milk. The board for animal domestication and utilization was led by Bon, another of the Caligastia 100. There were several types of animals tamed during that time but are now extinct. For many years, man has lived with the dog, and the Blue race had already tamed the elephant. The Caligastia Corps taught man the use of the wheel. It was during this time that the pigeons were trained to send messages or calls for help. The pigeons were taken on long trips and released to test their ability to return home.

3. The advisers regarding the conquest of planetary animals. At the head of this group was one named Don. Not only was early man taught to domesticate the animals, but it was also beneficial for him to learn to protect himself against the remaining hostile creatures.

Melchizedek said the purpose of those ancient walls was to protect against ferocious beasts as well as to prevent surprise attacks by other hostile humans. The humans living outside of the walls and in the forest had to depend on tree-dwelling, stone huts, and maintained fires at night to protect themselves from animals.

4. The faculty on dissemination and conservation of knowledge. This group was constructed for educational purposes of those early ages and was presided over by one called Fad. Fad's educational method also helped in the supervision of employment and instruction to improve the processes of labor. Fad formulated the first alphabet and introduced a writing system. This alphabet consisted of 25 characters. Our early ancestors used as writing material tree bark, clay tablets, stone slab, and a form of parchment made of hammered hide and crude paper-like material made from wasp nests. They had a library at Dalamatia where they kept many records that were destroyed soon after Caligastia disloyalty. The Blue Man was partial to using the alphabet: they made the most significant progress along this line. The Redman liked picture writing. The Yellowman preferred symbols for words and ideas, just about the same as they use today. But everything was lost during the confusion of the rebellion. It destroyed any hope humanity had of having a universal language for thousands of years.

5. The commission on industry and trade. This group was instrumental in nurturing industry within the tribes and promoting business among the various groups that were at peace. The leader of this council was called Nod. According to The Urantia Book, this is the same Nod that the Land of Nod was founded. In the Bible, (Genesis 4:16 and 17), Cain, the older son of Adam and Eve, who had murdered his brother Abel, went to the Land of Nod where he found a wife. This Council encouraged every type of primitive manufacturing. This group significantly improved these primitive peoples' standard of living by introducing new commodities that attracted the surrounding tribe's attention. The Council of Science and art immensely improved salt production. It was among these groups that the first of those educated at Dalamatia used the first commercial credit. From a central exchange of credit, they secured tokens, which were accepted instead of the actual object of barter. The world did not improve on this method of business for thousands of years.

6. The College of revealed religions. Earth's civilization emerged out of the force of necessity and the hammer of fear. But this council led by Hap had made considerable progress in their effort to substitute creature fear (ghost worship) for Creator fear and God reverence before the confusion of the rebellion disrupted their endeavors.

The prince's staff didn't present a religion that was too complicated for the primitive mind to grasp. Hap did yield to the desire of the inhabitants of the city to establish a religious service. His group provided the Dalamatia with seven chants of worship, and they also gave daily praise. Hap and his group eventually taught them the father's prayer that was:

Father of all whose Son we honor, look down on us with favor. Deliver us from fear of all except save you. Make us a pleasure to our divine teacher and always put truth on our lips. Deliver us from violence and anger: give us respect for our elders and that which belongs to our neighbors. Give us this season green pastures and fruitful flocks to gladden our hearts. We pray for the hastening of the coming of the promise up-lifter, and we would do your will on this world as others do on the world beyond.

The prince's staff was limited to natural methods and ordinary means for race improvement, but they looked forward to the promised Adamic race as the goal of evolutionary growth and the attainment of the height of biological development.

7. The guardian of health and life. This council, led by one named Lut, was concerned with the promotion of primitive hygiene and sanitation conditions. The many essential methods taught to our ancient ancestors were lost during the confusion of subsequent ages until rediscovered in the twentieth century.

The Caligastia 100 taught our ancestors the importance of cooking, boiling or roasting food. By doing so, they avoided many sicknesses; also, cooking reduced infant mortality and helped in early weaning. Many of the early teachings of Lut's, guardians of health persisted among the tribes of the earth on down to the days of Moses, even though significantly distorted. One of the main reasons the leaders of this group had such a difficult time teaching our ancient ancestors good hygiene was because the real cause of many diseases was too small to be seen by the naked eye. Another obstacle was that primitive humans held all fire in superstition. It took thousands of years to persuade them to burn refuse. In the meantime, they were encouraged to bury their decaying rubbish.

Before the Prince arrived, washing was considered a religious ceremony exclusively. It was difficult to get those primitives to wash their bodies as a health precaution. Lut finally induced the spiritual teachers to include water as part of the purification ceremonies to be practiced as noontime devotion once a week in the worship of the Father of all.

8. The planetary council on Art and Science. This group did a great job improving the industrial technique of early humans and elevated their concept of beauty. Their leader was called Mek. The little science and art they did practice throughout the world at that time were at their lowest ebb. But the rudiments of science were taught at Dalamatia. Pottery and decorative art were also enhanced. The idea of human beauty was improved. Music meant little until the arrival of the Violet race, the race Adam and Eve brought into existence.

It was practically impossible to get a primitive man to experiment with steam power even after the repeated attempts of their teachers. They never could overcome their fear of the explosive power of confined steam. They finally consented to work with metal and fire, although a red-hot piece of metal was a terrifying object to early man.

Mek made significant progress in advancing the culture of the Andonite and the art of the Blue Man. In fact, interbreeding of the Blue man with Andonite produced an artistically gifted type, and many of them became master sculptors. They didn't work with stone and marble, but their work of clay hardened by baking adorned the Garden of

Dalamatia. There was considerable progress in the building of homes. But most of what was learned was lost in the long dark rebellion and was not recovered until modern times.

9. The governors of advanced tribal relations. This group was responsible for bringing society of that age up to the stage of statehood; the head of this group was Tut. The leaders of this group did a great job of bringing about intertribal marriages. They encouraged courtship and marriage after the couple became acquainted with each other. Their dances were made to serve valuable social ends. The advanced teachers of that primitive age taught them many competitive games, but those ancient people were severe people; they displayed little humor. Few of these practices survived the planetary rebellion.

Tut and his council labored hard to promote a peaceful relationship between the tribes of primitive humans and to improve tribal government. In the area where the Prince's headquarter stood, there was a more advanced culture, and these improved social relations were very helpful in influencing the more remote tribes. I will quote the final council in its entirety; it was directed by one of the Caligastia 100 called Van.

[66:5.31] 10. ***The Supreme Court of tribal coordination and racial cooperation.*** *This Supreme Court was directed by Van and was the court of appeals for all the other nine special commissions charged with the supervision of human affairs. This council was one of wide function being entrusted with all matters of earthly concern, which were not specifically given to the other group. This selected corps had been approved by the Constellation Fathers of Edentia before they were authorized to assume functions of the supreme court of Urantia.*

I believe the information about the ten councils came down to us after 200 thousand years as the ten kings of the Sumerian's King List. A list of their kings, each ruling for thousands of years. People forgot all about councils and started calling those committees' heads kings. Those that were head of each Council no doubt lead those groups for thousands of years, before Lucifer's rebellion. After the uprising, the Tree of life was taken away from the 60 that rebelled, and they died just as the humans they came to help. The Sumerians claim those kings were from heaven (they were the sons of God of Genesis 6:4 the Anunnaki.)

When the Prince and his staff arrived on our planet, the entire world was caught up in the stalemate of tradition and slavery to the mores of those days. The Caligastia 100 arrived and announced a new era for individual initiations within the human tribes. The new rules were soon interrupted by the rebellion, so the people of that time never were liberated from the slavery of customs and fashion, which still dominates our world today.

The 100 were very familiar with the culture and arts of those higher worlds. They also knew such knowledge was practically useless in a world populated by barbaric, primitive humans. But these wise beings knew not to try a sudden transformation or uplifting of the savage races of this era. The 100 were very much aware of the slow process of evolution, so they wisely refrained from radical changes modifying human life on earth.

Each of the ten planetary commissioners acted slowly and naturally to advance the humans of that time. They planned to attract the best minds of the surrounding tribes, and after training them, they were sent back to their people as emissaries of social uplift. These 100 never imposed their mores upon another tribe even those of a superior race. They always patiently worked to uplift and advance the time-tried mores of each race. Those who worked for the betterment of a tribe or race were always a native of that particular tribe or race.

Again, the Dalamatia teachers were cautious not to force their new concept upon primitive humans; they said their motive was progression by evolution and not a revolution by revelation. The humans of that time spent many years acquiring what little religion and morals they had, and those superhuman Caligastias knew better than to rob them of their advances, confusing them by over-teaching and over-enlightening them.

The Prince's headquarters, though very beautiful, was designed to awe the primitive human of that age. The Higher Beings that gave us this information state that the central temple of worship and the ten council mansions of the supervising groups were works of art. The buildings where the 100 resided were very simple a model of neatness and cleanness. Everything was primitive in comparison with later day development.

At the Prince's headquarters, there were no methods adopted which did not naturally belong to the earth. The staff of the prince lived together as though they were husbands and wives, but they had no children of their own. The 50 patterned homes of Dalamatia always sheltered around 500 adopted little children gathered from the more advanced families of the Andonic and the Sangik races, but many of the children were orphans. They were fortunate to have had the discipline and training of those super parents. After these children had been in the Prince's school three years (which they entered between age 13 and 15), they were eligible for marriage and ready to receive their commissions as emissaries of the Prince to needy tribes of their race.

Fad developed the Dalamatia plans for teaching that worked as an industrial school where the pupils learned hands on. This plan of education did not ignore the importance of mental training and the development of character. Among the later students trained in Mesopotamia for work with respective of races were the Andonites from the highlands of western India, and the Redman and Blue man represented as well.

Hap, head of the college of revealed religion, Proclaim a moral law to the early races. This law was known as "The Father's Way" and contained the following commands:

1. You should fear nor serve any God but the Father of all.
2. You shall not disobey the Father's Son the world's ruler nor show disrespect to his superhuman associates.
3. You should not speak a lie when called before the judges of the people.
4. You shall not kill men, women, or children.
5. You shall not steal your neighbor's goods or cattle.
6. You shall not touch your friend's wife.
7. You shall not show disrespect to your parents or elders of the tribe.

These laws of Dalamatia lasted for thousands of years, much longer than the Ten Commandments with which we in the Western world are familiar. When I began to examine these laws, they reminded me of the ten commandments of Moses. Ironically, *The Urantia Book* states that many of the stones those laws inscribed upon are now beneath the water on the shores of Mesopotamia and Persia. It was a custom in those days to hold one of the commandments in mind, one for each day of the week, as a salutation and to recite at mealtime.

The measurement of their day was the lunar month, a period of 28 days. Those super-teachers introduced the seven-day week, and it grew out of the fact that seven was one-fourth of 28.

In the country around the city of Dalamatia in an area around 100 miles, there were hundreds of graduates of the Prince's school. They were engaged in the herding of animals, and they carried out instructions they received from the Prince's staff and other human helpers. Some were even keepers of the land.

Humanity was not sentenced to toil the land because of some curse: "In the sweat of your brow shall you eat the fruit of the fields." (Genesis 3:19) Cultivation of the soil is inherent in establishing an advancing civilization in an evolutionary world. In fact, agriculture was one of the fundamental teachings of the Prince's staff. Dalamatia had a residence of almost 6,000 at the time of the rebellion. This number included students, but the visitors always numbered over 1,000. The Melchizedek, who presented this paper, said one would be amazed

at the fantastic progress made over thousands of years. But almost all were lost during the horrible confusion of the coming spiritual darkness that followed the Caligastia catastrophe of deception and sedation. The Melchizedek refers to the characters of Caligastia and Lucifer, and what they believe contributed to their fall.

Misfortunes of Caligastia

[66:8.1] *In looking back over the long career of Caligastia, we find only one outstanding feature of his conduct that might challenge attention; he was ultra-individualistic. He was inclined to take sides with almost every party of protest, and he was usually sympathetic with those who gave mild expression to implied criticism. We detect the early appearance of this to be restless under authority, to mildly resent all forms of supervision. While slightly resentful of senior counsel and somewhat restive under superior authority, nonetheless, whenever a test had come, he had always proved loyal to the universe rulers and obedient to the mandates of the constellation Fathers. No real fault was ever found in him up to the time of his shameful betrayal of Urantia.*

[66:8.2] *It should be noted that both Lucifer and Caligastia had been patiently instructed and lovingly warned respecting their critical tendencies and subtle development of their pride of self and its associated exaggeration of the feeling of self-importance. But all of these attempts to help had been misconstrued as unwarranted criticism and as unjustified interference with personal liberties. Both Caligastia and Lucifer judged their friendly advisers as being actuated by the very reprehensible motives which were beginning to dominate their own distorted thinking and misguided planning. They judged their unselfish advisers by their own evolving selfishness.*

For thousands of years, the Caligastia 100 progressed at an average pace. We must bear in mind that those 100 had the Tree of Life to sustain them and to live for long periods of time. I recall writers that I have researched such as William Bramley, (*The Gods of Eden*), Erich Von Daniken (*Chariots of the Gods*), and Jim Marrs (*Ruled by Secrecy*). And also two very important writers Christian and Barbara O'Brien, who wrote *Genius of the Few*. They wrote in detail about the people of the Garden of Eden. All these writers mentioned in their writings the unusual longevity of life of those they called extraterrestrials.

The information some of those writers claim to have received from Sumerian cuneiforms of many years ago are bits and pieces of the story of Adam and Eve that were passed down to us from antiquity, and perhaps the Caligastia 100 that those Higher Beings write about in *The Urantia Book*. I sometimes wonder if the Tree of Life was the original origin of the concept of Ponce de Leon's, Fountain of Youth. A fountain, if one bathed in it, would obtain perpetual youth. I am pretty sure that the legend of people living for hundreds of years originated from the time of Adam, Eve, and the Tree of Life, and perhaps as far back in time as that of Prince Caligastia's staff. As I continue to quote from *The Urantia Book* presented to our planet by a higher authority:

[66:8.4] *The Prince of Urantia went into darkness at the time of the Lucifer rebellion, thus precipitating the long confusion of the planet. He was subsequently deprived of sovereign authority by the co-ordinate action of the constellation rulers and on the universe authorities. He shares the inevitable vicissitudes of isolated Urantia down to the time of Adam's sojourn on the planet and contributed something to the miscarriage of the plans to uplift the mortal races through the infusion of the lifeblood of the new Violet race the descendants of Adam and Eve.*

[66:8.5] *The power of the fallen Prince to disturb human affairs was enormously curtailed by the mortal incarnation of Machiventa Melchizedek in the days of Abraham; and subsequently, during the life of Michael (Jesus) in the flesh, this traitorous Prince was finally shorn of all authority on Urantia.*

[66:8.6] *The doctrine of a personal devil on Urantia, though it had some foundation in the planetary presence of the traitorous and iniquitous, Caligastia, was nevertheless wholly fictitious in its teaching that such a "devil" could influence the normal mind against its free and natural choosing. Even before Michael's bestowal on Urantia, neither Caligastia nor Daligastia was ever able to oppress mortal or coerce any normal individual into doing anything against the human will. The free will of man is supreme in moral affairs; even the indwelling Thought Adjuster refuses to think a single thought or to perform a single act against the choosing of man's own will.*

[66:8.7] *And now this rebel of the realm, shorn of all power to harm his former subjects, awaits the final adjudication by the Uversa (headquarters of higher worlds) Ancient of Days, of all who participated in the Lucifer rebellion.*

As you can see, the rebellion of Lucifer and Caligastia, the once prince of this world had a tremendously adverse effect on our planet; and there is very little information in the *Bible*, or any place else, about the rebellion and this prince. Jesus mentioned in John 16:11: "The prince of this world is judged." The chaos and distortion the uprising caused are unbelievable; do you think this lack of information is a coincidence?

John the Revelator warned us in Revelation 12:12, states: "Therefore rejoice ye heavens and ye that dwell in them. Woe! To the inhabitants of the earth and the sea. For the devil is come down unto you having great wrath, because he knoweth he has but a short time." He warned us, and we took it all in as myths, and look what we have.

Chapter 3

The Lucifer Rebellion

For 300,000 years Caligastia had ruled as the Planetary Prince of our planet Earth when Satan, Lucifer's assistant, made one of his usual inspection calls. According to the Urantia Book, Satan is a real being (without the long tail and horns of folklore), like Lucifer, a personality of great brilliance, a higher being created by Michael, ruler of Nebadon, to help administer and rule the ten million inhabited worlds of Nebadon.

During his inspection, Satan informed Caligastia of Lucifer's proposed plans for a "Declaration of Liberty," a rebellion against Michael (Jesus) who created Lucifer and Satan and Caligastia. Caligastia agreed to throw in with Lucifer's rebellion and to betray our planet when the rebellion was announced. Loyal universe personalities look upon Prince Caligastia with especial disgust because of his planned and premeditated betrayal of trust. How did this betrayal happen? What are the reasons for the Lucifer Rebellion?

Lucifer Manifesto

Lucifer was a magnificent being, a brilliant personality who reigned in Jerusem upon the "holy mountain of God." Lucifer was the chief executive of a vast system of 1,000 inhabited worlds. He stood next to the Most High Fathers of the constellation in the direct line of local universe authority.

Self-contemplation is most dangerous, even to the exalted personalities of the celestial worlds. Concerning Lucifer, it was said, [53:1.3] *Your heart was lifted up because of your beauty: you corrupted your wisdom because of your brightness.* It appears that Lucifer fell in love with himself.

Lucifer was created by Michael of Nebadon and lived his life in Nebadon. Lucifer had never visited Paradise, abode of the Father of All, when in the Lucifer Manifesto, he charged that the Universal Father did not really exist. Lucifer denied that personality is a gift of the Universal Father. He even claimed that finaliters are in cahoots with Michael and the other Paradise Sons to foist a fraud on all creation. (Finaliters are one-time mortals from inhabited planet like ours who survived death, fused with their Thought Adjusters, evolved for millions of years, reached Paradise, became One with the Father, and returned as finaliters to serve in the local universe administration as Higher Beings.)

Lucifer wanted the local systems to be autonomous, so he protested the right of Michael, Jesus the Creator Son, to assume sovereignty of the local universe in the name of a "hypothetical" Paradise Father. Lucifer admitted that Michael was the Creator Son of the local universe, but not a God and rightful ruler. Lucifer denounced those beings higher than himself in authority as foreign tyrants for interfering in local universe affairs. He bitterly attacked the Ancients of Days—those beings who reign supreme in the superuniverse and who are now responsible for judging the fate of rebels like Lucifer.

Lucifer contended that immortality was inherent in the system personalities, that resurrection was natural and automatic and that all creatures would live eternally, except for the arbitrary and unjust acts of the executioners of the Ancients of Days. (In fact, the Ancients of Days do have the final say whether an evil being goes to the second death when they shall exist no more: "He that hath an ear let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the church; he that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death." (Revelation 2:11).

There are many more accusations in the Lucifer Manifesto; I encourage readers to read it for themselves in Paper 53, Section 3 of The Urantia Book. The Lucifer Manifesto is a document so full of lies and blasphemy that it can be sickening to read. Yet it is valuable to

see the inner workings of a brilliant mind who fell in love with himself and deluded himself into opposing a system of truth, beauty, and goodness that had operated to the benefit of trillions of beings for billions of years—merely to satisfy Lucifer’s own pride of self. And we still see the outcome of Lucifer Rebellion.

We are not the only creatures who are evolving and must reach an understanding of God through experience, faith, and knowledge. Whether created from dust like us humans and ascending from an inhabited planet or created by God and descending to experience the worlds of time and space, every being on every level struggles with problems and dilemmas. The Higher Beings descend to gain experience and nurture us; that is how they evolve.

For example: Jesus is known in the higher worlds as a Creator Son, created by God the Father to rule a local universe. Before a Creator Son can earn the sovereignty of his own universe, he must experience seven initiations or bestowal missions in which he incarnates as seven different creatures of his universe so he may know firsthand what his creatures experience. When Michael of Nebadon was born onto our world as the baby Jesus, that was his 7th and final initiation, the bestowal mission that confirmed his sovereignty. (Matthew 28:18:) “And Jesus came and spake unto them saying, all authority in heaven and on earth has been given to me.” He had completed his missions and become sovereign of his universe, which is also our universe. In John 18:36 Jesus told Pontius Pilate: “My kingdom is not of this world.” He was speaking literally. His kingdom is our local universe of Nebadon.

The Higher Beings also learn and evolve; through faith and experience, they conclude that there is a God in Paradise.

The Melchizedek who authored this paper on the Lucifer Rebellion writes, of all the administrative work in a local universe, no trust is considered more important or sacred than a Planetary Prince who assumes responsibility for the well-being and guidance of evolving mortals of a newly inhabited world. The Higher Beings write that of all types of evil, none is more personally destructive than the betrayal of one’s friend’s confidence in you. Caligastia’s deliberate sin completely twisted his personality; his mind was never able to regain its balance fully.

[67:2.1] *Shortly after Satan’s inspection and when the planetary administration was on the eve of the realization of great things on Urantia, one day, midwinter of the northern continents, Caligastia held a prolonged conference with his associate, Daligastia.*” After this conference, Daligastia called into session the ten councils of Urantia, the Caligastia 100. Daligastia opened with the statement that Prince Caligastia planned to announce himself as absolute sovereign of the planet; Daligastia demanded all administrative groups to relinquish all responsibility into the hands of Daligastia as manager, pending the reorganization of planetary government and the redistribution of those offices.

This shocking demand was followed by a superb appeal by Van, chairman of the Supreme Council of Coordination. Van, a distinguished administrator, and an able jurist denounced the proposed course of Caligastia as an act bordering on planetary rebellion and asked his conferees to abstain from all participation in Caligastia’s rebellion until an appeal could be taken to Lucifer, the System Sovereign of Satania; Van won the support of his entire staff. The appeal was taken to Jerusem (headquarters world of Satania, our local system). Van was not then aware that Lucifer was the ringleader of the rebellion. When orders returned from Lucifer designating Caligastia as the supreme sovereign of Urantia and commanding total obedience to his mandates, Van was flabbergasted. It was in reply to this confounding message that Van made his memorable address seven hours in length in which he formally accused Daligastia, Caligastia, and Lucifer of standing in contempt of the sovereignty of the universe of Nebadon. And he appealed to the Most Highs of Edentia (the

headquarters world of the constellation to which our system belongs) for support and confirmation.

Before the Lucifer rebellion, a communications system connected the administration of the Planetary Prince and the Caligastia 100 with the higher worlds, a part of the universal communications system which makes the speed of light look as though it is standing still; that's how fast it is. After the rebellion, all communication with higher worlds was severed; our planet and all other planets caught up in the Lucifer rebellion were quarantined, isolated, and utterly cut off from outside counsel and advice. The rebellious ones were cast down to earth, as (Revelation 12:12) says: "But woe to the earth and the sea because the devil has gone down to you! He is filled with fury because he knows that his time is short."

Daligastia, the assistant to Caligastia, formally proclaimed Caligastia "God of Urantia and supreme over all." With this announcement, the issues were clear, and each group drew off to begin the deliberations which would eventually determine the destiny of every superhuman personality stranded on our planet.

Seraphim and cherubim (higher forms of angels), and other celestial beings who were involved had to decide which side they would choose in the long evil struggle, the protracted sinful conflict. Many superhuman beings who happened to be on earth at the time of the rebellion were trapped, compelled to choose between sin and righteousness—between the ways of Lucifer and the will of the unseen Father.

For seven years, this struggle continued. There was great loss among the angels; Revelation 12:4 says the dragon's tail swept a third of the stars out of the sky and flung them to the earth; this referred to the huge number of fallen angels. It was not until every personality who was involved made the final decision that the higher authorities of Edentia could intervene and offer Van and his loyal associates justification and release from their prolonged anxiety and unbearable suspense.

The Seven Crucial Years

The Melchizedek council on Jerusem (capital of Satania) broadcasted the outbreak of the rebellion throughout Nebadon. Emergency Melchizedeks were sent right away to Jerusem. Gabriel, chief executive of the Creator Son Michael (Jesus), volunteered to act as the representative of the Creator Son Michael (Jesus) whose authority Lucifer challenged. When the facts of the rebellion of our local system were broadcast throughout Nebadon, a quarantine was imposed and our local system was isolated, quarantined from her sister systems, cut off from communication with other worlds—to prevent the spread of rebellion to still more worlds.

On our planet, the inspiring loyalist Van saved 40 members of the Caligastia 100 who stood together and refused to join the Lucifer Rebellion. Some of the staff's human assistants, especially Van's assistant Amadon, bravely defended Michael's universal government. But there were huge losses among what we would call higher angels, seraphim, and cherubim. Prince Caligastia organized groups of rebel personalities to do his bidding. Van organized the faithful groups, and then began the great battle for the salvation of the planetary staff and other marooned celestial personalities.

During the time of this struggle, the faithful ones dwelled in an unwalled, poorly protected settlement a few miles east of Dalamatia. But their dwellings were protected day and night by personalities unseen by human eyes, and the faithful ones had possession of the priceless Tree of Life. Several of the cherubim and seraphim with the aid of other unseen personalities had taken possession and assumed custody of the Tree of Life; they permitted only the 40 loyalists of the staff and their associated modified mortals to partake of the fruit and leaves of that energy plant.

Throughout the seven critical years of Caligastia's rebellion, Van put all efforts into ministering to his loyal men, women, and angels. Van was able to maintain such unshakable loyalty because of clear thinking, wise reasoning, logical judgment, sincere motivation, unselfish purpose, intelligent loyalty, experiential memory, disciplined character, and unquestioning dedication of his personality to the doing of the will of the Father in Paradise.

The Caligastia One Hundred after the Rebellion

[67:4.1] *When the final roll was called, the corporeal members of the Prince's staff were found to have aligned themselves as follows: Van and his entire court of co-ordination had remained loyal. Ang and three members of the food council had survived. The board of animal husbandry were all swept into rebellion, as were all of the animal-conquest advisers. Fad and five members of the educational faculty were saved. Nod and all of the commission on industry and trade joined Caligastia. Hap and the entire college of revealed religion remained loyal with Van and his noble band. Lut and the whole board of health were lost. The council of art and science remained loyal in its entirety, but Tut and the commission on tribal government all went astray. Thus were forty out of one hundred saved, later to be transferred to Jerusem, where they resumed their Paradise journey.*

The 60 rebels of the Caligastia 100 chose Nod as their leader. These 60 members worked hard for the rebel Prince, but they soon found out they no longer had the use of Tree of Life which bestows the sustenance of the system of life circuits. Through eating the fruit and leaves from the Tree of Life they could have lived on earth for thousands of years. The rebels awakened to the fact that by choosing rebellion, they were degraded to the status of mortals. Although they were superhuman beings, their lifespan was now limited; so to increase their numbers, Daligastia ordered immediate resort to sexual reproduction, knowing full well that the 60 rebels and their 44 modified Andonite associates were doomed to extinction by death.

When the sons of God (the Anunnaki of the Sumerians) of (Genesis 6:4) were ordered by Prince Caligastia to reproduce, they began having children among themselves, and those children became giants or Nephilim; see The Urantia Book [50:3.5.]

We all can agree that in ancient times there were giants on Earth, but even the experts are confused when it comes to where they come from. Well, with a little research and the help of a book titled The Urantia Book, I believe I have discovered their ancient origin. Genesis 6:4 states: "There were giants (Nephilim) in the Earth in those days: and also, after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men, men of renown." People never notice it says after the giants they went into the daughters of men. The giants were already here when they started having children with humans.

Few people know that in ancient times women and men were called sons of God see Hebrews 12-6-7. So those sons of God that the Sumerians called Anunnaki (those who came from heaven) in Genesis 6:4 were men and Women. And they started having children among themselves and they were the ones that became giants. This is what The Urantia Book has to say about it. Paper

50 section 3 paragraph 5 *"These assistants to the Planetary Prince seldom mate with the world races, but they do always mate among themselves."* Here they were talking about the sons of God in Genesis 6:4. (The planetary Prince is mentioned in the Bible when Jesus said, "The Prince of this world is judged)." John 16:11. Those sons came to earth to help civilize humanity hunter-gatherers.

Those giants cause so much trouble on earth, the sons of God the Anunnaki superiors order them to start having children with humans, and they became men of renown. See Numbers 13:30-33 and Deuteronomy 2:10 and 2:20 you will learn how evil those giants were.

(Genesis 6:4) says of these children by the daughters of men: They were the heroes of old, men of renown. Their offspring became the Aryan and the Sumerian people, very advanced people. As mentioned In the Bible men and women were called sons of God; there was no distinction, (Hebrew 12:6-7.)

After the fall, Nod and the disloyal staff migrated to the north and east. Their descendants were known as Nodites, and the place they dwelled was known as "The Land of Nod." It is amazing how this story—and their genes—came down to us thousands of years ago. The History Channel has reminded us that Higher Beings had children by humans. Season 6, volume 1, disc 2, "The Star Children" of The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens," mentioned a geneticist, David Wright of Harvard Medical School, who discovered genes in humans from 400,000 years ago that contain an unknown ancestor.

There was chaos in and around Dalamatia for almost 50 years after the Lucifer Rebellion. The Higher Beings write that a complete reorganization of the world was attempted; revolution took the place of evolution. Although the superior and partially trained tribes in and around Dalamatia appeared to have made sudden advancement, when these new and radical methods were attempted on the outlying people, they opened Pandora's Box: the confusion was indescribable and racial pandemonium was the result. The rebels taught our ancient ancestors' doctrines of liberty for which they were not ready; this knowledge might have made sense in a democratic age but was too advanced for them and caused all kinds of mayhem.

Right after the rebellion, the entire rebel staff was engaged in a frantic defense of the city against the hordes of semi-savages who attacked its walls as a result of the doctrine of liberty prematurely taught to them. Consequently, Caligastia's plans for the reconstruction of human society by his ideas of individual freedom and group liberties were a complete failure. Society quickly resumed its old biological level as it was before the coming of the Planetary Prince, and humanity's forward struggle had to start all over again.

About 150 years after the rebellion, a tidal wave engulfed Dalamatia, and this land did not emerge until almost every vestige of the once-noble culture was obliterated. Van and his followers had retreated to the highlands west of India, where they were exempt from attacks by the confused races of the lowlands. From this place, Van and his associates planned the rehabilitation of humanity.

During the seven years before divine help arrived, Van placed the administration of human affairs into the hands of 10 commissions, four to each group. The senior resident Life Carriers on our planet, who live in another dimension but were visible to Van and his staff, took temporary leadership of the 40 during the seven years of waiting. Groups of Amadonites—humans—accepted responsibility for those commissions when the 39 loyal staff members returned to Jerusem.

Van and his special team continued their work on earth with the help of The Tree of Life for over 150,000 years. They supplied the biological advantage which multiplied and continue to supply leaders for the world throughout the long Dark Ages of the post-rebellion age.

Seven years after the outbreak of the Lucifer rebellion Van's call for help and directions was finally answered. To us humans, seven years seems an unreasonably long time to wait for one's call for help to be answered. But according to The Urantia Book, the Higher Beings respect free will choice. Not until the Most High Fathers of the constellation of Norlatiadek (the constellation to which our world belongs) were sure that every personality

in our local system had freely decided whether to side with Lucifer or the Creator Son Michael, would the Most High Father send forth the mandate that Urantia would now be governed by twelve Melchizedek Sons of God and an advisory council including one of the fallen Prince's former aides who remained faithful to Michael, two resident Life Carriers, a Trinitized Son (one who came forth from the Trinity in Paradise), and the loyal Van.

Twelve Melchizedeks were sent to our planet from higher worlds, seven years after the rebellion. The Urantia Book calls this group the twelve Melchizedek receivers because they received authority over this planet from the deposed and disgraced Planetary Prince. They preserved what civilization our ancestors had achieved at that time on our planet; their policies were faithfully carried out by Van. Around 1,000 years after the rebellion, Van had more than 350 advanced groups scattered throughout the world that helped spread civilization; they consisted mainly of mixed descendants of the loyal Andonites, the Sangik races of color, and members of the Nodites who sided with Van.

Even with the setback of the rebellion, there were good strains of biologic promise on earth. Under the benevolent supervision of the Melchizedek receivers, Van and Amadon continued their work of fostering the natural evolution of humans. They helped to forward the physical evolution of the human species until it reached the point of its culminating attainment. At that point, a material Son and Daughter of God (Adam and Eve) would be sent from Jerusalem to our planet Urantia.

Van stayed on earth until Adam and Eve incarnated on our planet. He remained as head of all superhuman personalities operating on our planet earth. I know this statement in The Urantia Book will turn heads due to our human limitations, but the Higher Beings write that Van and Amadon were sustained on our planet by the technique of the Tree of Life, along with the specialized life ministry of the Melchizedeks, for over 150,000 years. I, for one, do not find this surprising as we do not know what Higher Beings are capable of doing; after all, they helped create God's universe according to God's plans.

Van and Amadon worked on our planet until shortly after the arrival of Adam and Eve. Some years later, they were taken to Jerusalem. I sincerely believe there is truth in these stories. As I mentioned before, I've read several books about beings from other worlds visiting our world thousands of years ago, beings who were able to live on our planet for thousands of years. It appears that the Higher Beings did give us information in the past and, as usual, the information was greatly distorted with the passage of time. Similarly, the Higher Beings who wrote the Urantia Book are giving us information today, but very few are paying attention.

With all the knowledge we have available today, we shouldn't have a problem analyzing the Lucifer Rebellion and reaching the conclusion that there are higher worlds. Residents of those higher worlds are just as capable of sinning as we are, but their sins affect a greater part of the universe than our small human sins. Our sins only affect humanity and our own planet.

There are many kinds of Higher Beings in The Urantia Book I do not mention because it would make this book huge; you the reader will get to know these Higher Beings when you read The Urantia Book. But there is one group I must introduce: they are known in The Urantia Book as midwayers because they exist midway between humankind and angels. The midwayers reside on our planet but in another dimension; normally we can't detect their presence.

While watching the episodes of The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens," I heard about those ancient aliens who appeared to have been warring amongst themselves. You can read about this battle in India's Mahabharata literature; the battle reminds me of the midwayers. At the time of the Lucifer Rebellion, there were 50,000 midwayers on our plane. Then 40,119

midwayers rebelled along with Lucifer. Those rebels caused chaos on our planet before the coming of Christ and Pentecost.

Fortunately, after Jesus Christ vanquished Lucifer, Satan, and the rebel midwayers were imprisoned on a special detention planet in a higher dimension. In the *Bible*, (Matthew 12:24, the leader of the secondary rebel group was known as Beelzebub, prince of the devil. The existence of these rebel midwayers explains some of the mysteries raised in The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens" series. It is my sincere opinion that midwayers can come and go, in and out of our dimension at will, even to the point of physical protective intervention. The 9,881 midwayers who remained loyal to Christ were of great help to Van and to this day provide valuable services to mankind.

The Struggle for Civilization

The Higher Beings write in The Urantia Book, Paper 68, of "The Dawn of Civilization," the long struggle forward of the human species from a state little better than animal existence. Civilization is a racial acquirement; it is not biologically inherent. Therefore, all children should be reared in an environment of culture, and succeeding generations of youth must receive their own education. The superior qualities of civilization, such as science, religion, and agriculture, are not transmitted from one generation to the next by inheritance. The Dalamatia teachers taught the social evolution of a cooperative order which had a beneficial effect on our ancient ancestors. The Dalamatian teachers nurtured humanity for 300,000 years. It wasn't easy for primitive man to learn that there is strength in community. A man alone did not stand a chance unless he bore a tribal mark meaning that any assault made upon him would be revenged. In (Genesis 4:15,) "And the Lord set a mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him."

Those tribes that were willing to organize themselves into primitive societies were more successful in their dealings with nature and also with their fellow man. Their possibility of survival increased greatly. Cooperation is not a typical trait of humanity. Humanity learned first to cooperate out of fear; slowly, they discovered that it is beneficial to work together, and then they realized that they would be more successful in conquering their environment by working together.

The Urantia Book teaches that the two most important things that spurred humans to become thinkers were hunger and fear. In hungry times, man had to improve his methods of gleaning food to prevent starvation. When humans began to eat meat this had a significant influence on human brain development. Fear prompted man to continually think of new ways to feed and protect himself and his family.

Although fear played a tremendous role in the development of the human mind, fear is now one of humanity's greatest enemies; fear destroys the soul.

The civilization of humanity was a long process that required thousands of years. How many of us take the time to think with gratitude about what our ancestors had to experience for us, their progeny, to reach this point in our evolution? The days of our ancient ancestors were full of uncertainty with predatory beasts hounding them wherever they wandered. The humans of ancient times had a stupendous fear of the darkness of night. I can imagine how throughout the night, images of creeping things faded in and out of their consciousness as they tried desperately to sleep.

Factors in Social Progression

Civilization may appear to be an inconsistent mass of striving and struggling, but there is overwhelming evidence of purposeful striving, not old dead stagnation. If we take the time and analyze life with care, we eventually see purpose emerging; the whole social body

pushing toward destiny. But human destiny does not appear to be pre-destiny, but rather a *choice* of destinies.

It's documented in quantum physics that Newtonian physics does not apply to minute particles such as photons (small particles that light is made of). In Newtonian physics, we can know the position and momentum of an airplane flying at 200 miles per hour in an eastern direction; if it stays on course for two hours we can track its precise location. But in quantum physics, it is impossible to know the position and speed of those small particles at the same time. Any measurement of those tiny particles is only a probability; in physics, this is called the Heisenberg Uncertainty Principle. Today, we have social biologists, as well as psychologists, applying this principle to humanity. Social biologists say that it is impossible for any prophet to predict the future and that their prediction can only be a probability. For a person who is headed down a destructive course, any little shift could change the entire outcome of that person's life. Our path in life at any given time is a probability; we have free will and we can change at any time. A shift in one's thoughts can alter one's life.

If humanity is headed in the wrong direction, it's up to humanity to change direction. The prophecies of ancient and modern prophets are only probabilities that can change. If we are not willing to change, well, that is another story—and we must always reckon with the God within, beckoning humanity in the direction of truth, beauty, and goodness.

For our ancient ancestors, it took thousands upon thousands of years before there was any noticeable change in their daily routine. Early humans did not have the mind power to think of new procedures; instead, they reacted from instinct. However, the herd instincts of our far-off ancestors are not sufficient to account for the development of human civilization on Earth today. That is why the Higher Beings sent to earth uplifters such as the sons of God of Genesis 6:4 and Adam and Eve.

The history of our ancient ancestors is mostly a record of humanity's long food struggle. Primitive man only thought when he was hungry; hunger, vanity, ghost fear, and sex were the ingredients that gradually forced our ancient ancestors to become civilized. Food saving was his first self-denial and first thought of self-discipline. Primitive desires helped to bring forth civilization, but ghost fear helped keep it together.

Ghost fear had a terrific socializing influence on primitive humans; the normal fear was physiological, fear of physical pain, or that of hunger that constantly gnawed away at the abdomen, or some earthly mishap. But ghost fear was a new and sublime kind of terror.

Most dreams were horrifying for the primitive mind. Ghost dreams terrorized early humans, driving these superstitious dreamers close to each other for comfort against the unseen, imaginary danger of the spirit world. Ghost dreams (that is dreams of the dead and departed) were the most rapidly appearing difference between the animal mind and the human mind. Animals did not dream or visualize life after death. Other than the factor of ghost fear, all society was built on the fundamental needs of the tribes and their basic urges. The fear of the ghost brought a new and fantastic kind of fear, a doubt that reached out and away from the individual's needs. The dread of the departed spirit brought on a new and agonizing type of concern. This horrifying and powerful terror helped to mold the free social order of ancient times into a more disciplined and better-controlled primitive group.

Although fear was dreadful, it helped to shape the minds of primitive humanity and the ridiculous superstitions, some of which linger on still today. This superstitious fear of the unreal and supernatural later led to the "Fear of the Lord which is the beginning of wisdom." This fear of the Lord eventually grew into awesome wonder and respect. The early perception of ghost fear became the catalyst for a robust social bond; since that period, humanity has been striving for the attainment of spirituality.

All our modern institutions spring from the evolution of the primitive customs of our ancient ancestors. Almost anything we can think that is in use today has evolved from some gadget of our ancient ancestors. Even the jet planes that take us from one continent to another stem from old humanity's desire to fly like birds.

The mores and customs originated to adjust group living and mass existence. The mores were humanity's first social institution. All these common reactions grew out of the effort to avoid pain, and at the same time enjoy pleasure as well as power.

Ghost fear pushed primitive humans to visualize and dream of the supernatural, which laid the foundation for those mighty, social, influential mores, religions, and customs that passed from generation to generation. For example, one thing in the early years that helped to establish and crystallize the mores and customs of our ancient ancestors was the belief that the dead were jealous of the way they had lived and died and would bring punishment upon those mortals who broke the rules which they honored while in the flesh. Those Higher Beings bring out that all of this is illustrated today by the reverence the Yellow race has for their ancestors. Later, evolving primitive religions were reinforced by ghost fear to stabilize the mores and customs; nevertheless, advancing civilizations have done a great deal in liberating humankind from the fetters of fear and slavery of superstitions.

Before the arrival of the Dalamatia teachers, primitive humans were helpless victims to the mores, customs, rituals, and endless ceremonies from the time of their awakening in the morning until they fell asleep in their caves at night; things had to be done just so, according to the ways of the tribes. Our long-ago ancestors went through many phases of trials and tribulations.

Those Higher Beings make the statement that land is the stage of society, and humans are the actors and actresses, who must perform and conform according to the land situation. There were four steps in the forward march of civilization:

1. The collection stage. Hunger led to the first industry organizing. Primitive humans had food-gleaning lines that were several miles long gathering food from fruit trees, nuts, and roots as they passed. It was the primitive nomadic stage of culture and is still a way of life for some Bushman tribes in Africa and native Australia.

2. The hunting stage. The invention of tools and weapons helped ancient man to become a hunter, granting him considerable freedom from the slavery of hunger. A thoughtful Andonite, after bruising his fist during combat, rediscovered the idea of using a long stick as his arm and connecting a piece of flint in place of his fist. It was the beginning of the use of valuable weapons. Many tribes made their discovery this way, making various hammers that represented the great forward steps in human civilization. Today, some native Australians or Africans have progressed little beyond this stage, and it may be difficult for some of us to comprehend how some African tribes or native Australian tribes can lag so far behind in their progress of civilization. But if we take a close look around us at some of the so-called civilized humans, we can readily observe how some people grasp hold of the traditions and religious practices of their immediate ancestors and won't let go, no matter what, even though they know that their way is significantly flawed. They continue in this trend generation after generation, comfortable where they are and fearing to leave their familiar zone. This helps us to see humanity needed help to become civilized, they couldn't do it alone. And that is why the sons of God the Anunnaki in Genesis 6:4 was sent.

3. The pastoral stage. The domestication of animals made this age possible. The Arabs and native Africans are among the more recent pastoral peoples. Pastoral living further relieved primitive man from food slavery. Before the pastoral stage, society was one of sex cooperation, but the spread of animal domestication reduced women to the depths of social slavery. In pre-pastoral times, it was man's duty to provide the meat and woman's duty

to gather vegetables. When the man entered the pastoral age, the woman's dignity fell considerably. She was still responsible for delivering the vegetable necessities of life. The man only needed to go to his herd to produce an abundance of animal meat; man became somewhat independent of woman. By the end of this period, the woman was not much more than a slave in her environment; she was expected to labor and bear offspring just as the animals in man's herd. The man of that age had a great love for his herd—it's a pity that he did not love his wife as much.

4. The agricultural stage. This era brings the domestication of plants and represents the highest goal of material civilization. Prince Caligastia and his staff put great emphasis on agriculture and horticulture. Adam and Eve, who came 460,000 years after the prince, were gardeners, not shepherds. Gardening was an advanced culture in those days, and Adam and Eve did not eat meat. The growing of crops gave a little dignity to all races of humanity. During this period, men tended to the herds and women tilled the soil.

Thus human society evolved from hunting to herding to agriculture; with each step of this progression civilization became less and less nomadic; and more and more men began to live at home. Today, the industry has supplanted agriculture, but the industry cannot hope to survive if its leaders fail to recognize that the highest evolution must rest upon a sound agricultural foundation.

Evolution of Culture

Humanity is a creature of the soil, a child of nature; it matters not how desperately he tries to escape the land; in the end, he will fail. *From dust you are, and to earth you shall return.* This is true of all humanity.

The Urantia Book teaches that the fundamental struggle of man is for land, and always will be for land. The first social organizations of primitive humans were mainly the result of the winning of land. As man's intelligence increased by using science and the arts, the land yield increased, as well as the natural population of offspring brought under control, which provided leisure for the development of civilization. During times of plentiful land, a man's life was valuable, and loss of life was horrible. During times when land was scarce in conjunction with overpopulation, a man's life wasn't worth much; when there was war, famine, and pestilence, life was regarded with less concern.

For many years, it was the practice of an unmarried woman to kill her offspring. Among more civilized groups, the illegitimate child became the ward of the girl's mother. Many primitive tribes were almost exterminated because of the practice of abortion and infanticide. But regardless of laws or customs, very few children were destroyed after having been suckled as maternal affection is powerfully strong [68: 6.9].

Between Paper 68, The Dawn of Civilization, and Paper 73, where the story of Adam and Eve begins, the Higher Beings write about the evolution of governments of our ancient ancestors, state government, and so forth. We will not explore this right now, since most of us learned how government operates in school or through life experience.

Between the period of the Lucifer rebellion and the coming of Adam and Eve, around 150,000 years elapsed. Van and his staff directed humanity until the arrival of Adam and Eve and their staff. The cultural deterioration and spiritual deficiency resulting from Caligastia's betrayal and Lucifer's downfall, and the resulting confusion had little effect on the *biological* condition of the people on Earth. Organic evolution continued despite the cultural and moral setbacks that quickly followed the rebellion of Caligastia.

Almost 40 thousand years ago, the Life Carriers on duty on Earth concluded that humankind had reached its biological apex. The Melchizedek Receivers, having reached the same conclusion, agreed to join the Life Carriers in petitioning the Most Highs of Edentia,

asking that they send an inspector to earth to authorize the dispatching of biological uplifters, a Material Son and Daughter of God.

Tabamantia, the sovereign supervisor of a series of worlds, was sent to inspect our world, and after his inspection of racial progress, he recommended that our earth be granted a Material Son and Daughter. Less than 100 years from the time of the inspection, Adam and Eve, a Material Son and Daughter of our local system, arrived and began the formidable task of bringing order to a confused world retarded by rebellion and isolated from the higher spiritual realms.

When an evolutionary world like our planet reaches its biological limits that is a clue for those Life Carriers stationed on our earth to request from their superiors' biological uplifters. In other words, Adam and Eve's purpose for coming to our planet, where a beautiful Garden had been prepared for them, was to multiply and have up to a million offspring daughters, sons, grandchildren, and great-grandchildren. It is, no doubt, where the legend "be fruitful and multiply" originated; Adam, Eve, and their progeny were a new race of people, the violet race, designed to uplift humanity by contributing music, humor, spiritual capacity, and many other desirable physical and mental traits.

After these children had increased to the desired number (one million), they were to leave the Garden environment and mingle with the surrounding tribes who had been prepared for that purpose and interbreed with them. The interbreeding of this superior race of people was to act as a chain reaction and eventually uplift the entire world. That's the reason Adam and Eve were given the title "biological uplifters." From the story of Adam and Eve coming as biological uplifters after thousands of years, we inherited the tale in the Sumerian epic of Gilgamesh and the Anunnaki creating men as slave workers to mine gold. In a couple of chapters, we'll get into the story of Higher Beings creating bodies for Adam and Eve. We can only imagine how many times the story of Adam and Eve has changed over a period of 36,000 years. Now with *The Urantia Book*, we know the true story.

Usually, on a healthy planet, the coming of a Material Son and Daughter is like announcing the arrival of a great age of invention, material progress, and intellectual enlightenment. In other words, the appearance of Adam and Eve in most worlds is considered a tremendous scientific age, but not on Earth. Although on our planet people were physically fit, the tribes languished in savagery and moral degeneration. By around 10,000 years after the Lucifer rebellion, practically all the gains of the Caligastia 100 had been eradicated.

The Nodites were the offspring of the rebellious members of the prince's staff, their name coming from their leader, Nod. He was once the chairperson of the Dalamatia Commission on Industry and Trade. The Amadonites were the descendants of those Andonites who chose to remain loyal to Van. "Amadonite" is a cultural and religious term rather than a racial term; racially, the Amadonites were Andonites, descendants of Andon and Fonta.

The Nodites and Amadonites were the most advanced cultures and races of people on Earth. Before the arrival of Adam and Eve, there was a tradition of animosity between the Nodites and Amadonites. Whenever they tried to engage in any joint enterprise, a feud would surface. Even later in the Garden of Eden, their joint endeavors would fail, and it was exceedingly difficult for them to work in peace. The Amadonites felt the Nodites were a fallen race because of Nod's rebellion. They hid that information throughout ancient history.

Right after the destruction of the prince's headquarters at Dalamatia, the followers of Nod had separated into three different groups. The central group remained near their origin, near the headwaters of the Persian Gulf. The eastern group migrated to the highland regions of Eden just east of the Euphrates Valley. The western group was located on the northeastern

Syrian shores of the Mediterranean and adjoining territory. They scattered after they attempted to build the Tower of Babel.

The Nodites freely mated with the Sangik race and had left behind an able progeny. Some of the descendants of the Nodites rebel group joined Van and his loyal followers in the lands north of Mesopotamia, near Lake Van and the southern Caspian Sea region. Those Nodites that mingled and mixed with the Amadonites numbered among the “mighty men of old.”

Caligastia and his followers caused considerable confusion on Earth at that time because things didn't work out the way they had planned. They had rebelled against God's plans, which caused humanity of that time to be in chaos. Furthermore, the humans of that period were not evolved enough in their minds to work out the problems caused by the rebellion; most of the time, they were in absolute resistance, and their fear drove them to do unbelievable acts. At this time those so-called fallen sons of God could control a weak human mind. And they did all kinds of actions, trying to force our ancient ancestors to do things their way. Believe it or not, they are still trying to control people today, only in different ways. But since the coming of Jesus Christ and the Holy Spirit, they can no longer control a human mind unless the human is willing and allows it. And today many are selling their souls for money and fame.

Chapter 4

Midwayers and the Land of Nod

I've been studying the 2,097-page Urantia Book since 1997, and for several years I have been watching The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens" and have accumulated almost all of the episodes in my DVD collection. Over the years, I have read many books on extraterrestrials. But my most valuable experiences have been with the spirit of God within, and I sincerely believe there is a mental barrier between the higher self and the lower self that we humans have to overcome (this will be discussed further in the chapter on God within). Now I see clearly that the "Ancient Aliens" of The History Channel and the midwayers of The Urantia Book are the same beings.

The midwayers played a significant role in our planet's history. They appeared on our earth about the same time as the prince and his staff of 100 arrived. They had their origin in our world but in an inner dimension. How they happened to appear on our earth is so complicated that I don't think it would be necessary to recite right now. But they lived for thousands of years in that dimension. Over the years, they have been of great help to humans, especially those who remain loyal to the higher world. Many times, while they are in the process of helping one of us, we take it for granted and think it was an angel. For example, one of the midwayers who was responsible for the superhuman protection of Andrew, one of Jesus' apostles, was responsible for telling most of the story of Jesus as told in The Urantia Book (around 700 pages).

From the first appearance of the creatures of this order—called midwayers because they exist midway between mortals and spiritual beings—the prince and his staff recognized they could be of great help in carrying out the affairs of the Prince's headquarters. Fifty thousand of these beings came into existence.

Midwayers traveled far and wide studying and observing the different world races and reported their findings of those races to the prince and his staff at their headquarters. They continued their work until the tragedy of the planetary rebellion when over four-fifths of the midwayers joined the Lucifer rebellion. The loyal group went into service with the Melchizedeks under the leadership of Van until the days of Adam and Eve.

The fallen Prince was the ruler of those rebellious midwayers who caused havoc on Earth. The loyal midwayers, working with Van while trying to civilize humanity, had a difficult time because of them. Information about midwayers is scattered throughout ancient history in traditions of the different races of mankind. There are records of Sumerian cuneiforms thousands of years old attempting to describe those beings' records from Egypt, Babylon, and the Sanskrit of India. South America has similar mythologies based on bits and pieces of facts.

The midwayers who rebelled, as I mentioned, caused a great deal of chaos on our planet before the dispensation of Christ. They were the ones the writers of the *Bible* called evil spirits and demons. The rebel midwayers were able to reveal themselves to mortals under certain circumstances, and this especially was true of the midwayers who associated with Beelzebub, the leader of the secondary midwayers, mentioned several times in the Bible where the Jewish scribes accused Jesus of being part of the Beelzebub group (see Matthew 12:24) or (Luke 11:15). Before the days of Christ, these rebel midwayers were able to influence

the minds of certain inferior mortals and somewhat control their actions. It's not just a figure of speech, in the records they state, "And they brought to Jesus all sorts of sick people, them that were possessed by devils, and lunatics." (Matthews 8:16.) Jesus was aware of the difference between those who were sick and those who were possessed. Those different states were exceedingly confusing to the people living during his time. Today, those who believe in demoniacal possession and the casting out of devils, since the arrival of the Holy Spirit, are confusing demoniacal possession with hysteria, insanity, and feeble-mindedness.

The rebel midwayers under the leadership of Beelzebub seemed to have had a strong influence on ancient India's Hindu religion. In their Vedic literature, some of the stories look more like fantasy. After I started studying *The Urantia Book*, along with my other studies (for example, H. P. Blavatsky's *Secret Doctrine*), I was able to put the pieces together.

I was amazed at how involved the midwayers were with the Vedic race of people during ancient times. The History Channel calls the midwayers involved with ancient India, ancient aliens. The *Urantia Book* mentioned that about 16 thousand years ago 100 members of the Sethite priesthood migrated to India from Mesopotamia. I believe this priesthood created the Vedas, India's spiritual literature. Seth was a son of Adam and Eve who started the Sethite priesthood. This group was in constant contact with the midwayers. From India's Mahabharata literature, it appears the loyal midwayers were in an ongoing battle with the rebel midwayers. India called their battleships Vimana; if there was any kind of nuclear explosion during ancient times, they were responsible.

As I mentioned, midwayers were able to enter our dimensions through some portal or wormhole. The History Channel calls these portals Star Gates, mainly because of the Indians of South and North America. Before the time of Christ, the rebel midwayers or ancient aliens traveled all over the world trying to rule and control humans. If you watched the History Channel's "Ancient Aliens," you'll see they were all over the planet, trying to control.

But before Pentecost, no midwayer rebels or fallen angels were able to possess an average person's mind, and since the days of Pentecost, even weak-minded and inferior mortals have been free from such possibilities. There were 50 thousand midwayers on our planet at the time of Lucifer's rebellion; 40,119 had joined the uprising and about 10,000 remained loyal. Before Pentecost, the rebel midwayers caused havoc on Earth. The rebel midwayers were responsible for almost everything that happened that we call paranormal. They were doing all kinds of weird things with people who were weak-minded. These unique creatures were sometimes confused with the cherubim and seraphim who rebelled and were also on earth at the time of Lucifer's rebellion. Some of the older writers of the *Bible* called the midwayer creature evil spirits and demons, and the seraphim and cherubim evil angels and fallen angels. *The Book of Enoch* called them watchers and fallen angels.

Since Pentecost, the entire group of rebel midwayers is, at present, held prisoner by orders of the ruler of Edentia, awaiting the final adjudication of the affair of the system rebellion. They do not roam our world anymore to make their mischief. Since the day of Pentecost, there can never be such a thing as demoniacal possession.

Those midwayers who did not rebel are to this day doing great work for the benefit of humanity.

The Tower of Babel

The physical members of the prince's staff were sex creatures. One of their purposes was to participate in a plan to procreate that consisted of combined qualities of their order to inbreed with those of a selected stock of the Andon tribes. All of this was in preparation for the coming of Adam and Eve. The Life Carriers had planned a new kind of mortal with the breeding of the offspring of the Prince's staff with the first generation of Adam and Eve's

offspring. Can you imagine? The Life Carriers were planning a super-human race of people! Those beings were to be the teachers of humankind. But the plan miscarried and, again, we humans were deprived of benign leadership and superior culture. After the rebellion, Prince Caligastia's staff were denied their connection with the life currents of the system and the Tree of Life. When they realized they had become mere mortals, unable to live forever, Prince Caligastia ordered them to resort to sexual reproduction.

The Avalon surgeons created bodies for the Caligastia 100, as mentioned earlier, when they arrived on our planet, just as they created bodies for Adam and Eve, and the story passed down to us as God creating those bodies from the dust of the ground or chemical of the earth. After the Avalon surgeons created the bodies, then the Universe Mother Spirit of God breathed the breath of life into those forms. One may wonder why the Avalon surgeons didn't develop super bodies for us. It is because of our experience through evolution, the different stages of life that we will evolve into beings God want us to be. Our bodies are the vehicles that help us gain the necessary experiences needed to give birth to our souls; those beings that the Avalon surgeons made bodies for had already passed through our stage of development. That is why they came to help us. As we continue to evolve through the different stages of our evolution, we are destined to become something we are not yet capable of understanding.

The Higher Beings say, while they were hardly the Sons of God, the Prince's staff was regarded as gods by the evolving mortals of that time, and their early descendants. This is the origin of the universal folk tales of gods who came to earth and mated with the daughters of men and beget an ancient race of heroes, the Nodites. This legend became more confused with the race mixtures and the later appearance of Adamites in the second Garden of Eden.

The 100 corporal members of the prince's staff carried germ plasma of the Andonic strains, and it was naturally to be expected that if those 60 who rebelled engaged in sexual reproduction with the Andonites race that their offspring would resemble the Andonite's parents. Much to those Higher Beings surprise, the progeny of the Andonites and the Sangik who inbred with the Nodites rebels, the children were far superior in almost every way to the Andonites and Sangik races. This unexpected excellence was recognized, not only in the physical and intellectual capacity but also spiritual qualities as well this was over 200 thousand years ago. As I mentioned before this is the reason for the intellectual gap during ancient times plus Adam and Eve descendents.

The pure Nodite race was an incredible race of people. They were the ones with the original elongated heads, but they gradually mingled with the evolutionary races of the earth, and before long, their race considerably deteriorated. Initially, they lived for hundreds of years, but by ten thousand years after the rebellion, their average life span was little more than the evolutionary races.

When archaeologists excavated clay tablets, records of latter-day Sumerians descendants of the Nodites, they discovered lists of Sumerian kings going back several thousand years. As they go further back, the reigns of the individual kings lengthened to thousands of years. As mentioned earlier, I believe those kings on the Sumerian kings list were the leaders of the councils at Caligastia's headquarters in Mesopotamia, who had access to the Tree of Life.

The Nodites found a new city they called Dilmun as their national and cultural headquarters. It was about 50 thousand years after the death of Nod. After the descendants of the Caligastia 100 became too numerous for the immediate surroundings of their city to sustain them, and after intermarrying with the Andonites and Sangik tribes that surrounded their borders, their leaders began pondering what could be done to preserve their racial heritage. After much deliberation, the leaders called for a council of the tribes. This council adopted a plan by Bablot, a descendant of Nod.

Bablot proposed to erect a grand monument to glorify their race and build this temple in the center of the territory they occupied. This temple was to have a tower like none the world had ever seen. It was to be a memorial praising their past greatness. There were those who thought the monument should be built in the center of the new city, Dilmun, and there were others who felt such a magnificent structure should be made at a safe distance from the sea. They remembered the old tradition of their first capital Dalamatia being destroyed by the sea.

Bablot contended that the new building should be the nucleus for the future center of the Nodites' culture and civilization. Bablot's Council finally won out, and construction started according to his plans. The new city was named Bablot after the architect and builder of the tower, this location eventually became known as Bablod and then later as Babel.

It is believed by some that the foundation stones at the temple complex of Baalbek in Lebanon where the Romans built their Temple of Jupiter are the foundation stones for the building of the Tower of Babel. The Arabs in this area for hundreds of years believed the foundation stones were the foundation for the Tower of Babel. Some of those foundation stones weigh over 800 tons. If the reader looks up the Temple of Jupiter on Google and views the pictures of the stones, it's a high possibility they are looking at the foundation for the Tower of Babel. See The Urantia Book [77:4.1.] in the section on the Western or Syrian Nodites. I recently found out that it could not be the foundation for The Tower of Babel but was built by the descendants of those who attempted to build The Tower of Babel.

The Nodites were still at odds in their sentiments regarding the plans and purpose of this undertaking, and the leaders were not in agreement. After four and one-half years of working on the project, a significant dispute broke out, and they couldn't agree on the motive for building or their use after completion. Word got back to the tribes, and a high number of people began to gather around the construction site. Here is a list of the disagreements:

1. The largest group (almost half) desired to see the tower built as a memorial to the Nodite's history and racial superiority. They thought it should be a grand and imposing structure, which would challenge the admiration of all future generations.

The next largest faction wanted the tower designed to commemorate the Dilmun culture for they foresaw that Bablot would become a high center of commerce, art, and manufacturing.

2. The smallest and minority contingent held that the erection of the tower presented the opportunity for making atonement for the folly of their progenitors in participating in the Caligastia rebellion. They maintained that the tower should be devoted to the worship of the Father of all and that the whole purpose of the new city should be to take the place of Dalamatia to function as the cultural and religious center for the surrounding barbarians.

The religious folks were quickly voted down. The majority of the Nodites denied the teaching that their ancestors were guilty of rebellion, and they resented such a racial stigma. Disposing of one proposal to the dispute, and failing to settle the other two by debate, they resorted to fighting. The religious people fled to their homes in the south while their cohorts fought until almost all were killed. It is where the *Bible* refers to their language being confused, and they scattered throughout the earth, (Genesis 11:8,) "So the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off the building of the city." A small group migrated to the mouth of the Tigris and Euphrates River. After thousands of years, they were known as the people of the Land of Nod, where Cain found his wife. The second Garden of Eden was not too far from there between the rivers.

You can see the intricate conspiracy to hide their ancestors' shame and their identity, in Dan Brown's book, *The Da Vinci Code*. This conspiracy has been going on ever since the time of the Bible. They brought sin to our planet Earth when they rebelled against God's will, and their descendants have been trying to hide it ever since. The original Nodites ancestors, who were the sons of God, of Genesis 6:4, reached a high state of mind on the mansion worlds, and their descendants inherited part of that state of mind; and they were far ahead of the average tribes of their times. They were the men of renown of Genesis 6:4, and many thousands of years later became the Aryan and Sumerian races, who were very advanced peoples. Philip Coppens, an investigative journalist who has been a guest on The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens" since its inception, wrote in his book, *Ancient Alien Question*, page 44, that there has been a vast conspiracy going on for thousands of years that have been traced all the way back to Sumer, the land of the Sumerians, over 6,000 years ago. But we have seen that this history of betrayal goes back thousands of years before that. We, of planet earth, need to wake up; we have been duped. If we show by our efforts that we are trying to help ourselves, the Higher Sons and Daughters of God will be willing to help us. Everyone recognizes that if people are not willing to help themselves, there is little anyone else can do for them.

Two writers who go into detail about fallen angels are Christian O'Brien and his wife Barbara O'Brien of Britain who wrote *The Genius of the Few*; and they were pretty close to the truth, in my opinion.

Did you know the writer of *The Book of Enoch* was talking about the sons of God in Genesis 6:4 when he mentioned "Watchers"? Genesis 6:4 states: "There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown."

Enoch 15:1-2 states: "Then addressing me He spoke and said, hear neither be afraid, O righteous Enoch thou scribe of righteousness, approach hither, and hear my voice. Go say to the Watchers of Heaven, who have sent thee to pray for them; you ought to pray for men, and not men pray for you."

Wherefore, you have forsaken the lofty and holy heaven, which endures forever, and have lain with women: have defiled yourselves with the daughters of men; have taken yourselves wives; have act like the sons of earth and have begotten an impious offspring." *The Book of Enoch* 15:8 states: "Now the Nephilim, who have been born of the spirit and flesh, shall be called upon earth evil spirit, and the earth shall be their habitation. Evil spirits shall proceed from their flesh because they were created from above; from the holy Watchers their beginning and primary foundation." Friends, it states right here they were created from above, from the holy Watchers their beginning and primary foundation. And those Watchers were none other than the sons of God mentioned in Genesis 6:4, where sons of God had children by the daughters of men. And according to *The Book of Enoch*, their offspring are the evil spirits upon earth. The writer, of *The Book of Enoch*, warned us of the chaos those evil spirits would cause on earth, and you all know that our planet has had its share of trials and tribulations.

In the second century A.D., a Rabbi, by the name of Simeon Ben Jochai, pronounced a curse on whoever read the *Book of Enoch* (for whatever reason). The *Book of Enoch* was banned, burned, and shredded. *The Book of Enoch* brought out the truth about the fallen rebels. In the Western World, no one heard about the *Book of Enoch* for more than a thousand years. The book was rediscovered in an Ethiopic Church by the Scottish explorer James Bruce in 1773. It appears that the fallen ones didn't want anyone to recognize them. I suggest that

those who are sincere seekers read the Book of Enoch and The Urantia Book, and see if the puzzle of life doesn't start coming together. The above story was told in Forbidden Mysteries of Enoch, by Elizabeth Clare Prophet.

"Before the eighteenth century, scholars had believed the *Book of Enoch* to be irretrievably lost: composed long before the birth of Christ and considered to be one of the most important pieces of Jewish mystical literature, it was only known from fragments and references to it in other texts. James Bruce changed all this by procuring several copies of the missing work during his stay in Ethiopia. These were the first complete editions of the *Book of Enoch* ever to be seen in Europe." (Quoted from Graham Hancock, *The Sign and the Seal*.)

It is suggested that the reason for banning *The Book of Enoch* was because the powerful early theologians didn't like the stories in the book about angels instigating illicit love affairs with earthly women. *The Book of Enoch* says watchers were having affairs with earthly women. Enoch 12:5-6 states: "Then the Lord said unto me: Enoch scribe of righteousness, go tell the Watchers of Heaven, who have deserted the lofty sky, and their holy everlasting station, who have polluted with women. And have done as the sons of men do, by taking themselves wives, and who was greatly corrupted on earth." *The Book of Enoch* plainly states that it was the Watchers who polluted themselves with women; just as in Genesis 6:4, sons of God having children by the daughter of men; they didn't say anything about angels. Angels and Watchers were mentioned in Enoch to emphasize they were from heaven or higher worlds. Those that banned *The Book of Enoch* did so because the book identifies them. They are all over the world; and their primary concerns are prestige, power, and wealth.

Whoever wrote *The Book of Enoch* gave us a bird's-eye view of how those rebellious Nodites acted during his times (from what he read or heard), and he called their ancestors Watchers. During the time the *Book of Enoch* was written there must have been pure-line Nodites who were more concerned about their superiority than anything else. They may have been superior thousands of years ago, but their ancestors were also the ones who rebelled against God's law. They didn't want to accept that part of their so-called superiority.

Many of those belligerent Nodites migrated to Europe and caused havoc on that continent throughout the years and spread throughout the Middle East. They went to many countries. They used the Cro-Magnon man, the blue race that became the White race in Europe, as their shield to hide behind while they caused havoc during the Dark Age in Europe.

On the other hand, you have religious groups who want to show remorse for their progenitors' mistakes. It's not that God punishes us for the error of our ancestors, but anyone can see you can inherit a situation many years later. Here, we have the belligerent ones who are selfish and want to do their own thing; and we have those who are loving and kind, who strive to do God's will. These people will help save our planet. It is not benefiting God when we are asked to do his will; it is for our benefit. God's law is the nature of our existence, and how we will survive.

Around 12 thousand years ago, there was a second attempt to build the Tower of Babel by the mixed races of Mesopotamia: The Andites, Nodites, and Adamites. They attempted to erect a new temple where the old one was started, but there was insufficient support to see the project through. This region was long known as the Land of Babel. The Andites were the result of inbreeding between the Nodites and the Adamites, and they were the beginning of the Aryans and Sumerians, who were very advanced peoples. We must realize after thousands of years the story of the Tower of Babel has changed many times. The original

attempt to build the Tower of Babel happened about 50 thousand years after Lucifer's rebellion and over 100 thousand years before Adam and Eve's appearance on Earth. According to the *Bible*, this is how the story was told in the days when the Old Testament was compiled. "And they said, let us build us a city and a tower, whose top may reach unto heaven, and let us make us a name, lest we are scattered abroad upon the face of the whole earth Genesis."

"And the Lord came down to see the city and the tower, which the children of men had built. And the Lord said, Behold the people are one, and they have all one language, and this they begin to do: and nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined doing. Let us go down, and there confound their language, that they may not understand one another's speech."

"So, the Lord scattered them abroad from thence upon the face of all the earth: and they left off to build the city."

"Therefore is the name of it called Babel; because the Lord did there confound the language of all the earth: and from thence did the Lord scatter them aboard upon the face of all the earth," Genesis 11: 4-8. That was when the Nodite race, the people who tried to build the Tower of Babel, spread out around the globe.

The Nodite Centers of Civilization

The dispersion of the Nodites was the result of the conflict over the Tower of Babel. This war among themselves significantly reduced the pure-line Nodites and was, in many ways, responsible for their failure to establish a tremendous pre-Adamic civilization. The Nodite people decreased over a period of 100,000 years until the Adamic breeding uplifted them. But even in the days of Adam, the Nodites were still a mighty people. Many of their mixed descendants helped to build the Garden of Eden and several of Van's group captains were Nodites.

Three of the four great Nodite centers were established right after the Bablot conflict.

[77:4.3] 1. **The western or Syrian Nodites.** *The remnants of the nationalistic or racial memorialists journeyed northward, uniting with the Andonites to found the later Nodite centers to the northwest of Mesopotamia. This was the largest group of the dispersing Nodites, and they contributed much to the later appearing Assyrian stock.*

[77:4.4] 2. **The eastern or Elamite Nodites.** *The culture and commerce advocates migrated in large numbers eastward into Elam and there united with the mixed Sangik tribes. The Elamites of thirty to forty thousand years ago had become largely Sangik in nature, although they continued to maintain a civilization superior to that of the surrounding barbarians.*

[77:4.5] *After the establishment of the second Garden, it was customary to allude to this nearby Nodite settlement as "the land of Nod"; and during the long period of relative peace between this Nodite group and the Adamites, the two races were greatly blended, for it became more and more the custom for the Sons of God (the Adamites) to intermarry with the daughters of men (the Nodites).*

[77:4.6] 3. **The central or pre-Sumerian Nodites.** *A small group at the mouth of the Tigris and Euphrates rivers maintained more of their racial integrity. They persisted for thousands of years and eventually furnished the Nodite ancestry which blended with the Adamites to found the Sumerian peoples of historic times.*

[77:4.7] *And all this explains how the Sumerians appeared so suddenly and mysteriously on the stage of action in Mesopotamia. Investigators will never be able to trace out and follow these tribes back to the beginning of the Sumerians, who had their origin two*

hundred thousand years ago after the submergence of Dalamatia. Without a trace of origin elsewhere in the world, these ancient tribes suddenly loom upon the horizon of civilization with a full-grown and superior culture, embracing temples, metalwork, agriculture, animals, pottery, weaving, commercial law, civil codes, religious ceremonial, and an old system of writing. At the beginning of the historical era, they had long since lost the alphabet of Dalamatia, having adopted the peculiar writing system originating in Dilmun. The Sumerian language, though virtually lost to the world, was not Semitic; it had much in common with the so-called Aryan tongues.

[77:4.8] *The elaborate records left by the Sumerians describe the site of a remarkable settlement which was located on the Persian Gulf near the earlier city of Dilmun. The Egyptians called this city of ancient glory Dilmun, while the later Adamized Sumerians confused both the first and second Nodite cities with Dalamatia and called all three Dilmun. And already have archaeologists found these ancient Sumerian clay tablets which tell of this earthly paradise "where the Gods first blessed mankind with the example of civilized and cultured life." And these tablets, descriptive of Dilmun, the paradise of men and God, are now silently resting on the dusty shelves of many museums.*

[77:4.9] *The Sumerians well knew of the first and second Edens but, despite extensive intermarriage with the Adamites, continued to regard the garden dwellers to the north as an alien race. Sumerian pride in the more ancient Nodite culture led them to ignore these later vistas of glory in favor of the grandeur and paradisiacal traditions of the city of Dilmun.*

[77:4.10] **4. The northern Nodites and Amadonites — the Vanites.** *This group arose prior to the Bablot conflict. These northernmost Nodites were descendants of those who had forsaken the leadership of Nod and his successors for that of Van and Amadon.*

[77:4.11] *Some of the early associates of Van subsequently settled about the shores of the lake which still bears his name, and their traditions grew up about this locality. Ararat became their sacred mountain, having much the same meaning to later-day Vanites that Sinai had to the Hebrews. Ten thousand years ago the Vanite ancestors of the Assyrians taught that their moral law of seven commandments had been given to Van by the Gods upon Mount Ararat. They firmly believed that Van and his associate Amadon were taken alive from the planet while they were up on the mountain engaged in worship.*

[77:4.12] *Mount Ararat was the sacred mountain of northern Mesopotamia, and since much of your tradition of these ancient times was acquired in connection with the Babylonian story of the flood, it is not surprising that Mount Ararat and its region were woven into the later Jewish story of Noah and the universal flood. About 37,000 B.C. Adamson [one of Adam and Eve's sons] visited one of the easternmost of the old Vanite settlements to found his center of civilization. [77:4.2-4.8]*

In *The Book of Enoch*, Chapters 14-15, the writer warned his people not to associate with the Nodites or Nephilim. He warned they would teach how to sin against God. The writer taught his people that thousands of years before their time the Nodites or 'ancestors' rebelled against the laws of God. *The Book of Enoch* called the beings *The Urantia Book* calls Nodites, Watchers, and fallen angels. By the time *The Book of Enoch* was written about 300 years before Christ, the Nodites were slowly dying out. With the information the writer provided in *The Book of Enoch* Chapter 14-15 you can see the original bodies those Watchers were using were made for them by beings from higher worlds that we call heaven. Professor Samuel Noah Kramer, one of the greatest Assyriologists of our times, wrote in his book titled *The Sumerians* on page 20, "Here then we learn for the first time of the possibility that there had existed a non-Semitic people and a non-Semitic language in Mesopotamia." They later

called these people Sumerians. From where did these people come, if they were not the descendants of the sons of God of Genesis 6:4 that had children by the daughters of men? They were different from anyone else in all of Mesopotamia, and thousands of years later they became the Sumerians.



Massive foundation stones of Baalbek

Chapter 5

The Garden of Eden

Friends: Richard Klein (paleoanthropologist) April 12, 2004
[https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Richard_Klein_\(paleoanthropologist\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Richard_Klein_(paleoanthropologist))

Richard G. Klein (born April 11, 1941) is a Professor of Biology and Anthropology at Stanford University. He is the Anne T. and Robert M. Bass Professor in the School of Humanities and Sciences. He earned his Ph.D. at the University of Chicago in 1966 and was elected to the National Academy of Sciences in April.

Richard Klein, a paleoanthropologist at Stanford University, suggested that a genetic mutation occurred 40,000 years ago and caused an abrupt revolution in the way people thought and behaved.

I've been researching a book titled THE URANTIA BOOK with 2,097 pages since 1997 for about 25 years. When I saw this, I knew what happened. Adam and Eve came as advanced biological scientists to uplift humanity 37,000 years ago that's when humanity was uplifted. Adam and Eve were commanded to be fruitful and multiply they partially failed in their mission. After hundreds of years, there were hundreds of thousands of Adam and Eve's offspring. And they went all over the globe spreading their superior genes. According to Genesis 4-8-17, it would have been impossible for Adam and Eve to have been the first two people on Earth. If you think about when Cain went to the Land of Nod and found a wife his wife's parents had to be older than Cain who was supposed to be the first human child on earth.

I concluded that Adam and Eve's descendants built many of the megalithic structures all over the globe, using perhaps antigravity's magnetic force to move huge stones. And with discipline and corporation, building those megalithic structures they helped civilize much of humanity's hunter-gatherers, where the sons of God had failed. Van and his group had civilized many human hunter-gatherers.

If Adam and Eve had not come, many humans would still be in the hunter-gatherer stage of their evolution. Just look at today's hunter-gatherers who live isolated from the rest of humanity; they lag far behind the rest of humanity in their development.

When Adam and Eve arrived on our planet human bodies were materialized right in the Garden of Eden for them. And they were commanded to be fruitful and multiply. After thousands of years, hundreds of thousands of Adam and Eve's descendants spread their genes around the planet.

Adam and Eve's descendants are the intellectual giants the History Channel researchers are seeking. The History Channel Ancient Aliens episode about the "Grays" claimed that elongated red-haired skulls had been found all over the planet; geneticists claim they are "humans plus." The Urantia Book claims and I quote:

Paper 76, section 4 paragraph 1 states "Adam and Eve were the founders of the violet race of men, the ninth human race to appear on Urantia. Adam and his offspring had blue eyes, and the violet peoples were characterized by fair complexions and light hair color — yellow, red, and brown."

I have discovered that these humans with genetic material introduced forty thousand years ago are Adam and Eve's, descendants. The descendants of Adam and Eve were very

advanced. They built places like Gobekli Tepe, the 12-thousand-year-old advanced site in Turkey. After thousands of years of traveling and breeding around the world, their genes diluted until humans reached a normal evolutionary level with improved genes. I sincerely believe Adam and Eve's descendants were so advanced they were able to activate cosmic energy and use anti-gravity (a force mentioned in *The Urantia Book*) to move huge stones to build megalithic structures. In the distant future, our descendants will re-discover this form of energy.

Journalist Will Hart writes in his book, *The Genesis Race*, that about 40,000 years ago, around the same time the Neanderthals disappeared, a crucial transformational event occurred. One group of scientists is sure that a significant genetically based neurological change took place in *homo sapiens* at that time.

Another puzzle I put together with the help of *The Urantia Book*. Graham Hancock in his book "Fingerprints of the Gods" Page 135 paragraph 2 makes the statement: "The archaeologists' evidence suggested that rather than developing slowly and painfully as is normal with human societies, the civilization of Ancient Egypt, like that of the Olmecs. Emerged all at once fully formed. Indeed, the period of transition from primitive to advanced society appears to have been so short that it makes no kind of historical sense. Technological skills that should have taken hundreds of years even thousands of years to evolve were brought into use almost overnight—and with no apparent antecedents whatsoever."

To this day, archaeologists cannot figure out how the Egyptians suddenly became civilized; they say it appears to have happened overnight. However, this book presents substantial evidence that the Atlanteans helped them become one of the world's greatest ancient civilizations. This makes sense; there is no other answer. Plato mentioned in his writings the Atlanteans were very advanced people; with the help of *The Urantia Book*, putting the pieces together, I worked out where I believed Atlantis were and who were their people. Most experts believe Atlantis was around the Mediterranean Sea near the pillars of Hercules (generally thought of as the Strait of Gibraltar). How did the Atlanteans become so advanced? Well, as mentioned they were none other than the descendants of sons of God, the Anunnaki of the Sumerians that had children with the daughters of men, in Genesis 6:4.

They became men of renown; they attempted to build The Tower of Babel in history. After they scattered. The majority went to Syria. Evidence points to the majority who went to Syria and took over the Garden of Eden after Adam, Eve, and their group was forced out. They stayed there for 4,000 years until the Garden of Eden was destroyed by natural disasters known at that time as Atlantis. When Atlantis was destroyed, the survivors went to a land known as Khem (Egypt).

Here is circumstantial evidence that the Atlanteans were the builders of the Sphinx and Pyramid of Giza in a book titled *The Emerald Tablets—Of—Thoth—the—Atlantean*, on pages 3-4, paragraphs 4-5, I quote: "Called me than the Master, saying: "Gather ye together my people. Take them by the arts ye have learned of far across the waters until ye reach the land of the hairy barbarians dwelling in caves of the desert. Follow there the plan that ye know of." Gathered, I then my people and entered the great ship of the Master. Upward we rose into the morning. Dark beneath lay the Temple. Suddenly over it rose the waters. They vanished from Earth until the time appointed was the great Temple.

Fast we fled toward the Sun of the morning until beneath us lay the land of the children of Khem (Egypt). Raging, they came with cudgel and spears lifted in anger seeking to slay and utterly destroy the Sons of Atlantis, then rise I my staff and directed a ray of vibration, striking them still in their tracts as fragments of stone of the mountain. Then spoke I to them in words calm and peaceful, telling them of the might of Atlantis, saying we are

children of the Sun and its messengers. Cowed I them by my display of magic-science, until at my feet they groveled when I released them. Long dwelt we in the land of Khem (Egypt).”

To continue our history of Urantia: After Tabamantia’s inspection of the planetary races and certification that humanity was ready for biological up-lifters, for almost 100 years Van and his staff from their highland headquarters of world ethics and culture preached the coming of a Son and Daughter of God, racial up-lifters, worthy successors to the traitorous Caligastia. The majority of the world’s people during that period showed little or no interest in this announcement. But those who were in direct contact with Van and Amadon took Van’s teachings seriously and began planning for the arrival of the promised Son and Daughter.

Van related to his close friends the story of the Material Sons and Daughters on Jerusem as he learned about them before coming to our planet. He knew that Adamic Sons and Daughters always live in simple but beautiful garden homes. Van proposed 83 years before the arrival of Adam and Eve that he and his followers should devote themselves to building a garden home for their reception.

At their highland headquarters, Van and Amadon gathered from 61 scattered tribes a corps of over 3 thousand willing workers, and volunteers who dedicated themselves to the mission of preparing for the expected Son and Daughter. Van organized his volunteers into 100 different companies, with a captain over each, and an associate who served on his staff as a liaison officer. He retained Amadon as his associate. These 100 groups began the preliminary work. One group was commissioned to find a suitable spot for the Garden’s location and went forth in search of the ideal place.

By this time Caligastia and Daligastia had been stripped of most of their power to do evil. They tried to impede and frustrate the work of Van and his staff in preparing the Garden of Eden. But their evilness was nullified mainly by the faithful activities of almost 10 thousand loyal midwayers (beings midway between humans and angels) who tirelessly labored to advance the Garden of Eden.

The Garden Site

The committee responsible for locating a site journeyed for almost three years and found three suitable locations for the Garden of Eden. The first was an island in the Persian Gulf; the second, an area between the Tigris and Euphrates rivers; and the third, a long narrow peninsula, almost an island projecting westward from the eastern shores of the Mediterranean Sea.

Almost unanimously, the committee favored the third site. It took two more years to transfer the world cultural headquarters, including the Tree of Life, from Van’s highland headquarters to this Mediterranean peninsula. The Mediterranean peninsula had a healthy and wholesome climate. Its stabilized weather was due to the surrounding mountains and the fact that this area was just an island in a sea of islands. Although rain was plentiful in the surrounding highlands, it seldom rained directly in Eden. But each night from the extensive network of artificial irrigation channels a mist would rise to refresh the plants and trees in the Garden. The area picked for the Garden was no doubt the most beautiful location of its kind in the world. The climate was ideal. Nowhere else on Urantia existed a place that could have given itself so perfectly to becoming a beautiful paradise of botanic expression. In this area, the best of earth’s humanity gathered. Outside and beyond, the world continued in darkness, ignorance, and savagery. Eden was a beautiful, bright spot-on Earth. It soon became a beautiful and perfected landscape of glory. Thus, says The Urantia Book.

Establishing the Garden

The Urantia Book says that when Material Sons and Daughters begin their journey of biological upliftment on an evolutionary world, their place of residence is usually called “The Garden Of Eden” because it so resembles the floral and botanic beauty of Edentia, the capital of the constellation to which our system belongs. Van instructed that Eden was to be a Garden; no animal would be slaughtered within its boundaries. All flesh eaten by Garden workers throughout the years of construction was brought in from herds tended outside the Garden on the mainland. In fact, the first task of the garden volunteers was to build a brick wall across the neck of the peninsula. Once the wall was complete, the work of beautifying the landscape and building homes could safely proceed.

Only volunteer laborers prepared the Garden of Eden. They cultivated gardens and tended herds for support. Volunteers received contributions of food from nearby believers. This grand endeavor was carried through to completion despite the confused state of the world. At one point, Van suggested that they train the next generation to do the work of carrying on the enterprise in case the expected biologic uplifters were delayed. This seemed a lack of faith on Van’s part, which started trouble and caused many desertions. Still, Van continued with his planned readiness, filling empty posts with younger volunteers.

The Garden Home

The keepers of the Garden of Eden placed at the center of this Edenic peninsula garden a stone temple honoring the unseen Universal Father. This stone temple became the sacred shrine of the Garden. To the north, they built administrative headquarters; the west provided grounds for schools and the educational system of the expected Son and Daughter. In the eastern garden homes were built for the promised ones and their offspring. The architectural plan for Eden provided homes and abundant land for one million people.

At the time of Adam and Eve’s arrival, the Garden was only one-fourth finished. It had thousands of miles of irrigation ditches and more than 12,000 miles of paved paths and roads. There were a little over 5,000 brick buildings in the various areas. The trees and bushes were almost beyond counting; the roads and trails were well-built, and the landscaping was beautiful.

The sanitary system was by far the most advanced that had been tried before on Urantia. Drinking water in Eden was kept pure by strict observance of sanitary codes designed to preserve its purity. In the early days, much trouble was caused by those who had difficulty following the codes. But Van gradually impressed upon his associates the importance of not letting anything fall into the drinking water. Before they built a sewage disposal system the Edenites practiced the burial of all waste material, especially material that was decomposing. Amadon’s inspectors made their rounds each day to make sure nothing was left above ground that could cause sickness.

The Garden of Eden was ready for Adam and his consort, although hardly finished, already a gem of botanic beauty. Indeed, when Adam and Eve arrived, Adam was pleased with the basic plans of the garden, although he and Eve did make changes in furnishing their dwellings. During the early years of Adam and Eve’s occupancy, the place took on new beauty and grandeur.

The Tree of Life

Van planted the long-guarded Tree of Life in the Garden’s circular courtyard at the Father Temple with leaves for the “healing of the nation” and with fruits that had sustained him on earth for hundreds of thousands of years. Van knew that Adam and Eve would depend

on this gift from Edentia to perpetuate their lives after they appeared on earth in material bodies.

On the higher worlds where they originate, Material Sons and Daughters do not require the Tree of Life to give them eternal life; only when they repersonalize on a world of time and space like our planet must they depend on this tree for physical immortality.

The biblical “tree of knowledge of good and evil” may be symbolic or a figure of speech. But the Higher Beings tell us that the Tree of Life was no myth; it was real and present for a long time here on earth. When the Most Highs on Edentia selected Caligastia to serve as our Planetary Prince, along with his staff of 100 Jerusem citizens they sent to our planet by way of the Melchizedeks a shrub of Edentia, and this plant grew to be earth’s Tree of Life. These super plants store up specific space energies that are antidotal to the age-producing elements of animal existence. The fruits of the Tree of Life are like a super-chemical storage battery that when eaten mysteriously releases the life-extension force of the universe. Its fruit was useless to the ordinary evolutionary human. Yet the Tree of Life was invaluable to the 100 materialized members of the Caligastia staff, and to the 100 modified Andonites who contributed their life plasm to the Prince’s team. The Tree of Life made it possible for these beings to extend indefinitely their otherwise mortal existence on earth.

In the days of the prince’s rule, the Tree of Life grew in the central circular courtyard of the Father Temple. During the rebellion, Van and his associates in their temporary camp re-grew the Tree of Life from its central core. The Tree of Life was later taken to Van’s highland retreat where it served Van and Amadon for thousands of years. I am aware it is somewhat difficult to believe that someone could live for thousands of years; but writers like many writers also report that thousands of years ago the people of the Sumerian race left tablets behind, stating that beings from higher worlds visited our planet and lived here for thousands of years.

Adam and Eve

[74:0.1] *Adam and Eve arrived on Urantia from the year A.D. 1934, 37,848 years ago. It was in midseason when the Garden was in the height of bloom that they arrived. At high noon and unannounced the two seraphic transports accompanied by the Jerusem personal entrusted with the biologic uplifters to Urantia, settled slowly to the surface of the revolving planet in the vicinity of the temple of the Universal Father. All the work of rematerializing the bodies of Adam and Eve was carried on within the precincts of this newly created shrine. And from the time of their arrival, ten days passed before they were re-created in dual human form for presentation as the world’s new rulers. They regained consciousness simultaneously. The Material Son and Daughter always served together. It is the essence of their service at all times and all places never to be separated. They are designed to work in pairs; seldom do they work alone.*

As I read this paragraph, a thought crossed my mind: Adam and Eve were able to appreciate the fact that their bodies were “created” for them, so they knew for sure that *they were not their bodies, their bodies were only instruments for their use*. Many of us human souls need to understand this lesson regarding our bodies. The fact that Material Sons and Daughters always work in pairs reminds me of the concept of soulmates. Most Higher Beings work in pairs of complementary opposites.

Throughout the years, I’ve heard about the concept of soulmates or complementary opposites. There was a time when I was suspicious of this concept because I had heard of people destroying their lives when so-called religious leaders told them who their soul mate was; based on this information, they married, then quickly discovered it was a terrible

mistake. I believe it was the individual's mistake, due to lack of experience and understanding of the concept.

For the past 20 years or so, I've learned that most cultures of the world believe in some concept of complementary opposites; for instance, Chinese culture has yin and yang. In my search, I've accepted this concept to a limited degree due to an abundance of evidence pointing in that direction.

For example, the biblical story of Adam and Eve always puzzled me. Why did Adam eat the apple after Eve? Adam was supposed to be perfect before being kicked out of the garden. Being perfect, he must have known the consequences. I was aware the story was an allegory, but I believed that Adam purposely ate the apple. In other words, Adam committed the same sin Eve did because he knew that if he didn't, he and Eve would be separated. They were complementary opposites, and he couldn't bear the prospect of separation for perhaps thousands of years. He purposely ate the apple so they could stay together. I now read the story of Adam and Eve from a different point of view found in The Urantia Book. The way the Higher Beings relate the story, and through my experience, I was able to put together the puzzle concerning man's purpose on this planet. The story of Adam and Eve unfolds in The Urantia Book as a sad but beautiful tale; it is much more believable than what we have been taught in the Bible.

From my understanding of life, we were initially androgynous when we emerged from the first source, that Universal Being who is One. As we became individual personalities, we became male and female; the other half is our *complementary opposite*. That is one reason why most of us have an insatiable urge to be with the opposite sex. We seem to be in a constant subconscious search for our other half.

Women are the portal for the manifestation of the personality into the physical plan (birth), and therefore, the development of the young soul. I think about ancient times when women were held in high esteem. What accounts for woman's degraded status on this planet? Was it due to jealousy in those ancient times?

At some point in history, did men perhaps resent a woman being the only way for him to enter life on the physical plane? Or were women getting too much praise and becoming like the gods? What would be the reason to mistreat the very entity who brought you into the world? We should honor the life that did so much to bring us into this plane for the opportunity to develop our souls. Women should accept their status and be grateful to the Universal Being for the privilege and opportunity to serve life. At this stage of our development, we are like sculptures; we can mold our soul into beautiful structures to help uplift the consciousness of humankind. We will now explore the story of Adam and Eve in detail.

Reading from The Urantia Book, we discover that before Adam and Eve arrived on our planet, they were members of a senior corps of Material Sons and Daughters of God in a headquarters world called Jerusem. The Urantia Book also mentions that Adam and Eve were a little over eight feet tall. (I appreciate the way The Urantia Book gives details.) Adam and Eve honestly had an impressive portfolio: They were employed in the trial-and-testing natural laboratories on Jerusem for more than 15,000 years. They had been directors of the Division of Experimental Energy as applied to the modification of living forms before being chosen to come to our planet. Before holding this job, they had served as teachers in the citizenship school for new arrivals on Jerusem.

When the mandate was issued calling for volunteers for the mission of Adamic adventures on Urantia (our planet earth), the entire senior corps of Material Sons and Daughters volunteered. They knew that our planet had suffered greatly from the Lucifer Rebellion. One of the Higher Beings (referred to as) a Melchizedek Examiner, with the

approval of the Most Highs of Edentia, finally selected Adam and Eve as the biologic uplifters of Urantia.

During the Lucifer Rebellion Adam and Eve remained loyal to Michael, the Creator Son of our local universe, also known as Jesus. The pair presented themselves to Michael (our universe sovereign) and his staff for instruction and examination. They were given complete biologic and historical details about our planet and carefully instructed as to the plan to be pursued if they accepted the responsibility of leadership on our rebellion-torn world. They were given joint oaths of allegiance to the Most Highs of Edentia and Michael of Salvington. (Salvington is the headquarters world of our local universe of Nebadon, home of the Creator Son Michael, also known as Jesus.)

The arrival of Adam and Eve

Adam and Eve fell asleep on Jerusem and awakened in the Father Temple on earth in the Garden of Eden. There a vast audience had assembled to welcome them. They were face to face with the two beings they had heard so much about, Van and his faithful companion, Amadon. These two heroes of the Caligastia rebellion who remained loyal to Michael were the first to welcome the biological uplifters to their new home in the Garden of Eden.

On that day, there was a great deal of excitement and joy in Eden. Runners went in haste to the place where carrier pigeons were kept, shouting, "Turn loose the birds; let them carry the word. The promised Son and Daughter have arrived!" Tribes who believed Van's prophecy had kept up a supply of homing pigeons year after year for this occasion, to spread the news of Adam and Eve's arrival throughout the land.

Thousands of regional tribes accepted the teachings of Van and Amadon. For months, pilgrims poured into Eden to welcome the newly arrived couple and give praise to the unseen Father.

Right after their awakening, Adam and Eve were escorted to the reception hall on the high mound north of the Temple of the Unseen Father. This hall was made ready for the world's new rulers. At noon, the world reception committee welcomed this Son and Daughter from Jerusem. It was a grand reception where Adam and Eve were given charge of our planet. There were Higher Beings present whom the humans could not see, such as the chief of the midwayers, senior Melchizedek chief, two resident Life Carriers, and many more. (Van and Amadon were able to see these Higher Beings.) Adam and Eve were given ceremonial robes for this special occasion, the time of their formal induction into world rulership.

The Resurrection of the Sleeping Survivors

[74:2.8] *Then was heard the archangel's proclamation, and the broadcast voice of Gabriel decreed the second judgment roll call of Urantia and the resurrection of the sleeping survivors of the second dispensation of grace and mercy on 606 of Satania. The dispensation of the Planetary Prince has passed. The age of Adam, the second planetary epoch, opens amidst scenes of simple grandeur, and the new rulers start their reign under seemingly favorable conditions, notwithstanding the world-wide confusion occasioned by the lack of cooperation of their predecessor in authority on the planet.* (The Urantia Book refers to 606 of Satania, our planet's number in the local system registry.)

Every time a new dispensation begins, there occurs the resurrection of the dead: those who do not have faith enough to resurrect directly into higher worlds go to sleep when they pass on from this world. Then, when there is a new dispensation they are awakened as a group and sent forth to the higher worlds. Though they may have slept for thousands of years,

to those souls who awaken on higher worlds at the dispensational roll call, it is as if they had just fallen asleep a moment ago.

Isolated on a Quarantined Planet

After their formal initiation into rulership of our planet, Adam and Eve became dreadfully aware of their planetary isolation. The communications quarantine that was imposed on our planet at the time of the Lucifer Rebellion continued. This lack of communications from off-planet devastated Adam and Eve who were accustomed to continual broadcasts of spiritual interplanetary and interstellar communications. Soundless was the familiar broadcast, and absent were all the circuits of extra-planetary communication. Adam and Eve missed the contact they once had with every part of our local universe. Their colleagues had gone to orderly worlds with Planetary Princes who had their worlds functioning well, and with experienced staffs ready to receive them and competent to work with them during their early years of being stationed on those worlds. But here on our planet, it was a different story. The Lucifer Rebellion changed everything. Our planetary Prince was very present, although shorn of most of his power; yet he still made Adam and Eve's task difficult for them; he was the serpent in the Garden of Eden (Genesis 3:14).

Adam and Eve were very disillusioned. The Son and Daughter walked in the Garden on their first night under a beautiful full moon and discussed their situation. It was the end of Adam and Eve's first day on our strife-torn isolated planet, the confused planet that had been betrayed by its Planetary Prince. They walked and talked way into the night of their first night on earth; they felt isolated and lonely. Their second day on earth, Adam and Eve were in session with the planetary receivers, the Melchizedeks, and their advisory council. From the Melchizedeks and their associates, Adam and Eve learned more about the particulars of Caligastia's betrayal and the resulting cataclysm that so retarded our world's progress. Overall, it was a heartbreaking story. They learned in lengthy detail about the mismanagement of world affairs, and the facts concerning the collapse of the Caligastia scheme where he had attempted to accelerate the process of social evolution by proclaiming liberty before the tribes were ready. They also reached a full realization of the stupidity of Caligastia trying to achieve planetary advancement without divine plans for that achievement. And that was the close of their sad but enlightening second day on our planet. Adam and Eve, Son and Daughter of God, spent the whole of their third day inspecting the Garden of Eden, the most beautiful spot on earth. They were very pleased with what Van, Amadon and their staff had accomplished.

On the fourth day, Van and Amadon assembled everyone in Eden at the inaugural mound. Adam addressed the people concerning Adam and Eve's plans for the rehabilitation of our world. He outlined the course to be taken and the method they would use to rescue the low social state of our earth from the results of rebellion and sin. For Van and those who assembled, this was a great day. The day closed with a feast for the council of men and women who were selected to take on responsibilities in the new administration of world affairs. Mind you, women, as well as men, served in this administration. Such a thing had not happened since the days of Dalamatia. It was an astounding sight to see Eve, a woman, participate in the honors and responsibilities of world affairs with a man. Thus, ended Adam and Eve's fourth day on earth, according to *The Urantia Book*.

The fifth day was spent organizing a temporary government. This administration was to function until the Melchizedek Receivers left earth. (The Melchizedek Receivers were sent to earth to take charge after the Caligastia rebellion).

The sixth day was consumed by inspecting numerous types of humans and animals. Adam and Eve were escorted all day along the walls of Eden traveling in an easterly direction.

They reached a better understanding of what had to be done to rid the planet of its state of confusion. They wanted to create a harmonious world amid a variety of living creatures. Those who accompanied the couple were surprised at how well Adam understood the thousands upon thousands of animals shown to him. No sooner had Adam glanced at an animal he would then indicate its nature and behavior and give names descriptive of the origin, nature, and function of each material creature he saw. Those who hosted Adam's tour of inspection did not know the world's new rulers were some of the most expert anatomists of all Satania. Adam astonished those who accompanied him by describing a host of living creatures too small to be observed by the human eye.

After the sixth day, Adam and Eve rested for the first time in their new home in the east of Eden. The first six days of their exploration, they had been kept very busy. They looked forward to a day of rest, a day of freedom from all sense of duty. Adam had intelligently discussed the animal life of Urantia and had given his unusual inaugural address. His vast knowledge and his charming manners had won the hearts of the Garden dwellers. Not only did they accept the Son and Daughter wholeheartedly, but the majority were ready to fall down and worship them as gods.

On the night of the sixth day, while Adam and Eve slept, strange things were happening in the vicinity of the Father Temple, the center of the Garden of Eden. There, under the crescent moon, hundreds of ardent and excited men and women listened for hours to their leaders' pleas. These leaders meant well, but they didn't understand the simplicity and democratic manner of their new rulers. Long before daybreak that night, the temporary administrators of world affairs had decided that Adam and his mate were too modest. They concluded that divinity had come to earth, that Adam and Eve were gods, or so close to the god-state that they were worthy of reverent worship. The events of the last six days had been too much for even the best of humans of that time. Their heads were whirling as they struggled to comprehend these two advanced beings who had come to dwell amongst them. Therefore, they proposed to bring the noble couple up to the Father Temple at high noon of the seventh day so that everyone could worship them and prostrate themselves in humble submission. The Garden dwellers were sincere in this plan.

Van vehemently objected to all that was taking place at the Father Temple. (Amadon oversaw the honor guards that remained behind with Adam and Eve.) His continuous protest was in vain as he was told that he was too modest himself and that he was not far from being a god himself; otherwise, how could he have lived so long on earth, or how could he have brought predicted and brought forth such a significant event as the coming of Adam and Eve? The excited Edenites were about to seize him, to carry him to the mound of adoration. But he made his escape through the crowd, and being able to communicate with the midwayers, sent their leader in haste to fetch Adam. [The midwayers are the ancient aliens I believe The History Channel has been searching for in their episodes of "Ancient Aliens."]

It was around the dawn of the seventh day on our earth that Adam and Eve learned about the proposal of those well-meaning but misguided mortals. The midwayers were able to transport Adam and Eve swiftly to the Father Temple. (This is why I believe midwayers helped transport Adam and Eve's children from one continent to another in later years.) That morning, from the mound of their so recent reception, Adam gave a detailed explanation of the divine order of sonship; he made it clear to people representing the many tribes that only the Father, and those whom he designates, may be worshiped.

It was a grand day just before noon; there was the arrival of a seraphic Messenger (a higher angel not visible to humans) bearing the Jerusalem acknowledgment of the establishment of the world's rulers. As they moved away from the crowd, Adam pointed to the Father Temple and said: "Go now to the material emblem of the Father's invisible

presence and bow to him who sustains us all. Let this act be a promise that you never will be tempted to worship anyone but God." All the people did as Adam commanded and began to worship our invisible Father. Adam and Eve stood alone on the mound with their heads bowed.

After that incident, on the seventh day mornings were devoted to physical improvement, mid-day was dedicated to spiritual worship, the afternoon was devoted to mind culture and the evening was devoted to social rejoicing. This was not a law in Eden, but only a custom so long as Adam and Eve ruled on earth.

The Melchizedek Receivers remained on duty on our planet for seven years after the arrival of Adam and his mate. Although humans were not able to see the Melchizedeks, Adam and Eve could see them. After seven years it was time for the Melchizedeks to return to Jerusalem and turn duties of world affairs over to Adam and Eve. They took an entire day saying goodbye. That evening, the Melchizedeks gave the couple beneficial advice. Adam requested several times for his advisors to remain on earth. His request was denied. The time had come for the Material Son and Daughter to take full responsibility for world affairs. At midnight of the day the seraphic transports left the earth, destination Jerusalem, with 14 beings: 12 Melchizedeks, Van, and Amadon.

Things were going along quite well for the Garden couple, and it looked as though Adam would eventually have a plan for extending Edenic civilization to other parts of the globe. He took the advice of the Melchizedeks and began to foster the arts of manufacture. He had in mind the development of trade relations with the world outside the Garden of Eden. When the Garden was at full capacity, there were over 100 primitive manufacturing plants in operation and extensive trade relations with nearby tribes. For many years, Adam and Eve had been instructed how to deal with uncivilized worlds; they were prepared for their specialized contribution to the advancements of evolutionary civilization. But now, they were face-to-face with the problems of establishing law and order in a world of savages, barbarians and semi-civilized human beings. Except for the cream of earth's population, there were very few people ready for the Adamic culture.

Adam made heroic attempts to establish a world government only to find his efforts were in vain. He met with stubborn resistance at every attempt; humanity at that stage was too crude. For example, Adam put into operation a system of group control throughout Eden, and he united all these companies into the Edenic League. But he had serious trouble when he tried to apply these ideas outside of the Garden of Eden with the remote tribes. The moment Adam's group decided to work outside the walls of the Garden of Eden, they encountered direct resistance from Caligastia and Daligastia. (Yes, those two were still on the loose causing problems.) The fallen Prince was no longer world ruler, but he and his associate, Daligastia, had not been removed from the planet.

Caligastia is the original devil. For many thousands of years, he and his group remained in the background causing problems. Even today, if we allow them to influence us, they can affect our lives. Caligastia and his group were not taken off our planet with the rebel midwayers. However, as mentioned earlier, the evilness of Caligastia has been greatly curtailed since the coming of Christ.

Adam and his crew had a difficult time trying to convince the primitive and crude minds of men and women of that era that there were invisible beings in another dimension interfering in whatever they tried to accomplish. But those primitives couldn't grasp invisible beings in other dimensions. Just look at how difficult it is for the average person today to believe that there are other dimensions and beings who occupy those dimensions. Also, in the Garden of Eden, Adam had problems with some of the confused minds leaning toward the teachings of Caligastia's unbridled personal liberty theory. They caused many problems

for Adam and his mate, interfering with plans for orderly, progressive and substantial development. The Master of the Garden eventually had to give up some of his more progressive ideas and revert to some of Van's old policies.

Therefore, he decided to divide the Edenites into companies of 100 with a captain over each and lieutenants over groups of 10. Adam and Eve preferred a representative government in place of monarchical rule, but they found no group ready for such an advanced government on the face of the earth. For the time being, Adam had to abandon all thoughts of representative government. But he did succeed in establishing about 100 outpost social trade centers where he had a firm individual rule in his name. Van and his group had already established quite a few of the centers. Sending ambassadors from one tribe to another dated from the time of Adam. This was a step forward in the evolution of government.

Home Life of Adam and Eve

The Adamic family grounds consisted of a little over five square miles. The home-site provided for more than 300,000 pure-line offspring of Adam and Eve, but only the first unit of the proposed buildings was ever constructed. Before the Adamic family outgrew that which was provided, the whole Edenic plan was disrupted, and the Garden vacated.

The story of Adam and Eve is somewhat different in The Urantia Book from the Biblical story with which you may be familiar. Therefore, I hope you will bear with me. One must keep in mind that according to the Higher Beings this story took place about 37,000 years ago. The way the story reached us in the Bible has changed as civilization has changed. For instance, in the Bible, it was assumed that Cain was Adam and Eve's oldest child, but not so, according to The Urantia Book.

Adamson was the first child of Adam and Eve according to The Urantia Book. Their second child was a girl; then, another son was born, Eveson. And this was the beginning of a new race of people, the Violet race. I am sure the people of the Violet race were pretty much like the Red and Yellow races as far as color is concerned. Eve was the mother of five children—three girls and two boys—by the time the Melchizedek Receivers left our planet. The Urantia Book states that Eve had 63 children before the default: 32 daughters and 31 sons. The Edenic couple lived on our planet for over 500 years.

We must understand that Adam and Eve were superhuman beings, and they came to our planet as biological up-lifters. Since our humanity had reached its peak biologically, Adam and Eve's job was to *improve* the human race by bringing forth a million offspring in the Garden of Eden before they procreated with earth's people. Because they diverged from the divine plan, they brought discord into play, which we will soon discuss. By the time Adam and Eve left the Garden in default, their family consisted of four generations numbering 1,647 pure-line descendants. They had 42 children after they left the Garden, plus the two offspring they had with the mortal stock of the earth. It was their two offspring by mortal humans that caused the default of Adam and Eve and brought great pain and sorrow to our human race.

Cooking was universally practiced outside the Adamic sector of Eden; but there was no cooking in Adam's household. Adam, Eve and their children found their food—fruits, nuts, and cereal—ready prepared as they ripened. The family ate once a day shortly after noontime. Adam and Eve also imbibed light energy from space emanations in conjunction with the Tree of Life.

The Edenic couple's bodies radiated a shimmer of light, but they always wore clothing to conform to the custom of their fellow Edenites. The origin of the halo encircling the heads of supposed saints and holy men and women dates to the days of Adam and Eve. Since the

clothing they wore obscured the glow radiating from their bodies, only the emanation from their heads was observable.

Adam, Eve and their children could communicate with each other telepathically up to 50 miles. This thought exchange occurred in a delicate gas chamber located close to their brain structures. By this object, they could receive and send thought vibrations, but this power was lost when the mind took up discord, disruption, and evil.

The children of Adam and Eve attended school in the East of Eden, where they were intellectually taught according to the methods of the Jerusem schools until they were 16. The small children changed activities every half hour, the older children every hour. Here the older children acted as teachers for the younger children. It was a new sight on earth to see the Adamic children at play—joyful exciting activity for the sheer fun of it. From 16 to the age of 20, they taught at the Urantia School in the western end of the Garden of Eden, serving as teachers for younger grade children of the surrounding tribes.

The purpose of the western school was socialization. Mornings were devoted to horticulture and agriculture, afternoons to competitive play. Evenings were employed in social intercourse and the cultivation of personal friendships. Religion and sexual training were the parent's responsibility. The teaching in these schools included instruction regarding:

1. Health and care of the body.
2. The golden rule, the standard of social intercourse.
3. The relation of individual to group rights and community obligation.
4. History and culture of various human races.
5. Methods of advancing and improving human trade.
6. Co-ordination of conflicting duties and emotions.
7. The cultivation of play, humor and competitive substitutes for physical fighting.

The average age to become engaged for marriage was 18. At that time, young people started a two-year course of instruction in preparation for marriage responsibilities, and at 21, they were eligible to get married. Adam and Eve always performed the marriage ceremonies of the first and second generations of their children. After getting married, each couple began their life's work.

Eden's moral laws were not much different from the seven commandments of Dalamatia. The Adamites expanded the reasons for these commandments. An example is the command against murder. The indwelling Thought Adjuster or the God within was presented as one of the main reasons why one should not take another life. The Adamites taught that whosoever sheds the blood of another human, by a human should his/her blood be shed, for in God's image were humans made.

Public worship in the Garden was held at noon; sunset was the hour for family worship. The Higher Beings write that Adam did his best to discourage the practice of rote prayer. He taught the primitive races: for prayers to be effective, prayers had to be personal. In other words, prayer without feeling was useless; true prayer is the desire of the soul.

Adam's effort to get ancient man to pray with feeling was in vain. The Edenites continued praying from prayers handed down to them from the time of Dalamatia. Adam also attempted to stop the blood sacrifice in religious ceremonies, for the people to offer fruits as a substitute; in this he made but little progress before the disruption of the Garden.

The teachers of the Garden also had a difficult time teaching sexual equality. The way Adam and Eve worked together had a profound effect on the Garden dwellers. Adam explained that women as well as men contributed equally to the factors that unite to form a new being. Before this lesson, people assumed that all procreation resided in the "loins of the father." They looked upon the mother as a means of nurturing the unborn and nursing the

newborn. The more intelligent of the races on earth looked forward to the day they could intermarry with the superior children of the Violet race.

After reading this, I pondered for a while, thinking what a different world this would be if those grand plans to biologically up-lift humanity by that superior race had been carried out. But even with the small amount of DNA of this imported race, we secured a tremendous amount of good for the evolutionary race of humankind.

The Legend of Creation

Many people in the distant past, and today as well, believe that God created the heavens and earth in six days, and on the seventh day, He rested. As time passed and humans became a little more sophisticated, someone must have thought six days was not enough time to bring all this creation into existence. Perhaps one day they saw the statement in the New Testament, II Peter 3:8: "But beloved be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years and a thousand years is as one day." Seeing this statement, one could conclude that one of God's days is equal to a 1,000 of our years; so, if He created everything in six of His days that will equal 6,000 of our years, and on the seventh day He rested. That's another 1,000 years: all total, 7,000 years.

The conclusion is, the earth is a little over 7,000 years old. But this was a figure of speech; the writer could have just as well said a billion years is like a day to God. In other words, there is no such thing as time to God; we dwell on a world of time and space; God dwells in eternity. According to the Higher Beings, the whole story of God creating everything in six days and on the seventh day He rested, is based on the tradition that Adam and Eve spent six days in their initial survey of the Garden of Eden and on the seventh day they rested. Because of the circumstances, the period of the week became almost sacred. (The Dalamatians initially introduced the week.) Adam, having spent six days inspecting the Garden and planning for the organization of humanity was not prearranged; it was all worked out day by day. In The Urantia Book the Higher Beings write: [74:8.2] *The legend of creating the world in six days was an afterthought, in fact, more than thirty thousand years afterward.*

Today's scientists claim our universe is around 13.7 billion years old, a vast discrepancy between 7 thousand and billions of years. How can people continue to believe this story that our planet is a little over 7 thousand years old, with all the evidence we have available today? Not only the universe but also our planet is over several billion years old, according to earth's scientists.

The Default of Adam and Eve

After living on our planet for 100 years, Adam saw very little progress outside of the Garden of Eden. The reality of race improvement appeared to be a long way off. Their situation was so desperate it seemed to demand something more than the original plans. It often passed through Adam's mind, and he expressed these many times to Eve. Adam and Eve were loyal, but they were isolated from their kind; they were also distressed by the sorry condition of our planet.

Under normal circumstances, the first objective of planetary Adam and Eve would be the purging and blending of the races. On our planet, such a task seemed hopeless. Although biologically fit, the races on Urantia had never purged their retarded or defective strains, which would have been the work of the Prince and his staff. The rebellion caused many difficult problems for our human race. Adam and Eve found themselves in a world unprepared for the proclamation of the brotherhood of all men. Our world at that time was at its lowest point of spiritual darkness and cursed by the rebellion. No Son and Daughter of

God had ever set down in a more difficult world. The obstacles seemed insurmountable. And the early departure of the Melchizedek Receivers made their situation worse. Only indirectly, using an angelic order, could they communicate with any being outside of our planet. Slowly, their courage began to drain, and they became all but exhausted. The Higher Being who presented this paper had this to say:

[75:1.6] *Probably no Material Son of Nebadon was ever faced with a more complicated and seemingly hopeless task as confronted Adam and Eve in the sorry plight of Urantia. But they would have sometime met with success had they been more farseeing and patient. Both of them, especially Eve, were altogether too impatient; they were not willing to settle down to the long, long endurance test. They wanted to see some immediate results, and they did, but the results they secured proved most disastrous both to themselves and their world.*

The Caligastia Plot

Caligastia, the original snake in the Garden of Eden, frequently visited the Garden and had many conversations with Adam and Eve, but they were unyielding to his suggestion of compromise. Caligastia tried everything to win over Adam and his mate. But Adam and Eve had seen enough of the results of the rebellion to be immune against any of Caligastia's proposals. Caligastia's attempts to influence Adam and Eve's children were also unsuccessful. Neither Caligastia nor his associate had any power to force an individual to do anything against his/her will.

Before the time of the coming of Christ, Caligastia was still the Planetary Prince, but in name only. He wasn't stripped of his title until the resurrection of Jesus, when Christ won the right to be sovereign of Nebadon (our local universe). That is also the time Christ kicked Lucifer out of the heaven-world, out of his high state.

The fallen Prince Caligastia was determined to disrupt the work of Adam and Eve. He soon gave up on Adam and decided to try a wily attack on Eve. The evil one knew that his plan had to be clever if he hoped to deceive the mother of the Violet race. So, Caligastia contrived to entrap Eve by using a person of the loftier status of the Nodite group, a descendant of Nod. Nod had formerly served on the corporeal staff of Caligastia and became the leader of the 60 rebels of the Caligastia 100.

It was the farthest thing from Eve's mind to do anything to jeopardize Adam's plan. The Melchizedeks, knowing a woman's inclination to look for immediate results rather than plan for future effects, warned Eve before she and Adam departed Jerusalem of the danger they faced on this isolated planet. She was never to stray from her mate's side, she was not to attempt any personal or secret method for furthering their mutual cause. Eve had honestly carried out those plans for 100 years, and it never occurred to her that any danger was attached to the private meetings she was enjoying with one of the Nodites named Serapatatia. The whole affair developed so gradually and naturally; she was taken unaware. Garden dwellers had been in touch with the Nodites since the early days of the Garden of Eden. These mixed Nodites, descendants of rebellious members of Caligastia's staff, received a great deal of help from the Garden dwellers. Now, through them, the dwellers of the Garden were about to meet their complete undoing and final downfall.

The Temptation of Eve

Adam and Eve were finishing their first 100 years as our planetary rulers when Serapatatia, upon the death of his father, came into leadership of the western or Syrian confederation of the Nodite tribes. Serapatatia was a brown-tinted man, a brilliant descendant of the one-time chief of the Dalamatia commission on health who had mated with

one of the superior females of the blue race of those distant days. All through the ages, the blue race held power and wielded considerable influence among the western Nodite tribes.

Serapatatia made several visits to the Garden, and he much admired the righteousness of Adam's cause. Soon after taking over the leadership of the Syrian Nodites, Serapatatia announced his desire to establish and join the work of Adam and Eve in the Garden. Most of his people joined him in this program, and Adam was elated at the news that the most powerful and most intelligent of the neighboring tribes would be joining him in his plan of world improvement. Not long after this, Serapatatia and his staff were invited to a party given by Adam and Eve in their own home. Serapatatia soon became the most efficient of all Adam's lieutenants, honest and sincere in all his endeavors. Serapatatia was never aware, though, not even later, that he was used as a tool by the crafty Caligastia.

At this juncture, I would like to quote The Urantia Book and give the reader a bird's eye view of the cause of the default in the Garden of Eden:

[75:3.6] *It should again be emphasized that Serapatatia was altogether honest and wholly sincere in all that he proposed. He never once suspected that he was playing into the hands of Caligastia and Daligastia. Serapatatia was entirely loyal to the plan of building up a strong reserve of the Violet race (1,000,000 souls) before beginning to procreate with and up step the confused people of Urantia. But this would require hundreds of years to achieve, and he was impatient; he wanted to see immediate results in his own lifetime. He made it clear to Eve that Adam was oftentimes discouraged by the little that had been accomplished toward uplifting the world.*

For more than five years, Serapatatia advanced his plans; finally, they were developed to where Eve would consent to have a secret meeting with Cano. Cano was the most intelligent and active leader of the nearby tribes of friendly Nodites. Cano was very much in agreement with Adam and Eve's policies. He was one of the sincerest spiritual leaders of the neighboring Nodites who favored friendly relations with the members of the Garden.

The meeting took place one evening in autumn around twilight. It wasn't too far from Adam and Eve's home. Eve had never met the handsome and enthusiastic Cano. He was a magnificent specimen of superior physique and outstanding intellect of his ancient ancestors of the Prince's staff. Cano also believed in the good work that Serapatatia was doing. Outside the Garden, multiple mating was a common practice. Flattery and persuasion influenced Eve. She consented to their much-discussed plans and added her own little scheme of world saving to the more significant and more far-reaching divine plan.

Before Eve knew what was going on, the fatal step had taken place; Eve had sex with Cano.

Consequences of Eve's Decision

The decision that Eve made at that moment caused our human race to suffer beyond words. With her decision, she aborted the plan that the Divine Beings laid out for our earth: there must be 1,000,000 pure-line descendants of Adam and Eve on the planet before the violet race (Adam and Eve's descendants) can begin to procreate with earth's native races. Because of her decision, humanity now lingers far behind in our evolution. Many of us still wobble in a state of semi-consciousness. As so-called civilized humans, we do not yet understand our reason for being.

The day of Eve's downfall, the celestial beings who were stationed on our planet at that time were stirring. Adam realized something was amiss and he asked Eve to come aside with him in the Garden. For the first time, Adam heard about the long-nourished plan for accelerating world improvement. Eve and her conspirators felt they could improve on the divine plan. When Eve accepted the suggestion of Serapatatia, the divine plans for our planet

were shattered. The humans of that long ago period in history were now without a divine plan, and this was the curse of humanity. We were denied the completion of the program of biological up-lifting and spiritual guidance. With the help of the Tree of Life, Adam and Eve could have lived even into our time, helping to prepare us for life after death on Jesus's mansion worlds in higher dimensions. The Urantia Book says:

[75:4.2] *And as the Material Son and Daughter thus communed in the moonlit Garden, "the voice in the Garden" reproved them for disobedience. And that voice was none other than my own announcement to the Edenic pair that they had transgressed the Garden covenant; that they had disobeyed the instructions of the Melchizedeks; that they had defaulted in the execution of their oaths of trust to the sovereign of the universe.*

Eve had consented to participate in the practice of good and evil. Good is the carrying out of the divine plans; sin is a deliberate transgression of the divine will; evil is the misadaptation of plans and the maladjustment of techniques resulting in universe disharmony and planetary confusion.

Every time the Garden pair had partaken of the fruit of the Tree of Life, they had been warned by the archangel custodian to refrain from yielding to the suggestions of Caligastia to combine good and evil. They had been thus admonished: "In the day that you commingle good and evil, you shall surely become as the mortals of the realm; you shall surely die.

Eve's disappointment was pathetic; Adam analyzed their predicament. Although he was heartbroken and felt dejected, he had only pity for his mate. Despondent over the realization of failure, Adam sought out Laotta, the brilliant Nodite woman who was head of the western schools of the Garden. Adam, with premeditation, committed the "sin" of Eve. He deliberately chose the same fate as Eve: he had sex with Laotta. He sincerely loved his mate with a super-mortal affection and thinking of the possibility of being here alone on earth without her, he knew in all likelihood Eve would have to return to the higher worlds to await her fate. I believe Adam surmised that by committing the same transgression, his fate would be the same as Eve's. His conjecture was correct; they both had to remain on our planet until their dying days.

An incident with a woman named Laotta in the Garden of Eden is what I believe started the rumor that Adam had a first wife named Lilith. Lilith's dark origin began in Babylonian demonology; she was recognized by Hittites, Egyptians, Israelites, and Greeks. She reappeared in the Jewish Midrashim literature in the Middle Ages as Adam's first wife; some say this was between 400 AD and 1200 AD. I believe this was when the Jews realized they had two creations of man in the Bible (Genesis 1-27) and (Genesis 2:21) which they tried to remedy.

From that point on, Adam and Eve were the mortals of that time. They were no longer allowed to partake of the Tree of Life and would eventually die. They lived on our planet for over 500 years, yet like any other mortal from our planet, they were destined to die and experience the mansion worlds of which Jesus spoke.

The voice in the Garden that came down to us as God talking to Adam and Eve, I believe, is untrue. God does not speak to anyone in the way we received the information. The seraphic angel that presented this paper number 75, said it was she who spoke to Adam and Eve in the Garden. Her name is Solonia.

Eve told Cano of their often-repeated warning that anyone who disrupted the divine plans would surely die. Cano, not understanding the significance of the warning, assured her that a man and woman with good motives and right intention could do no evil; that she would live anew in their offspring who would grow up blessed and stabilize the world. However, although Eve and her conspirators had good intentions and a sincere desire to help the world, her sex act with Cano constituted evil because they departed from the divine plan.

It was the wrong way to achieve righteousness. Solonia, the seraph in the Garden, had this to say:

[75:4.8] *I talked to the father and mother of the Violet race that night in the Garden as it became my duty under such sorrowful circumstances. I listened fully to the recital of all that led up to the default of Mother Eve and gave both of them advice and counsel concerning the immediate situation. Some of this advice they followed; some they disregarded. This conference appears in your record as the Lord calling to Adam and Eve in the Garden and asking, "Where are you?" It was the practice of later generations to attribute everything unusual and extraordinary whether natural or spiritual, directly to the personal intervention of the Gods.*

When the inhabitants of the Garden found out what happened to Eve, they became infuriated and unmanageable, declaring war on the nearby Nodite settlement. They rushed out of the gates and attacked the unprepared Nodites destroying them. Not a man, woman, or child was spared. Cano, the father of the unborn Cain, also perished. Serapatatia, after realizing what had happened, was full of remorse and fear. The day after the attack, he went down to the great river and drowned himself. The children of Adam tried to comfort their distraught mother, while their father wandered off in solitude for 30 days. During that time, he composed himself, returned home and began to make plans for their future course of action.

It is sad that innocent children often share the results of mistakes of misguided parents. Those noble sons and daughters of Adam and Eve were overwhelmed by the immense sorrow and unbelievable tragedy that was suddenly and ruthlessly thrust upon them. It took over 50 years for the older children to recover from the sadness and grief of those tragic days, especially the 30 days their father was away. They were completely unaware of his whereabouts or fate. Quoting Solonia again:

[75:5.7] *And those same thirty days were as long years of sorrow and suffering for Eve. Never did this noble soul fully recover from the effects of that excruciating period of mental suffering and spiritual sorrow. No feature of their subsequent deprivations and material hardships ever began to compare in Eve's memory with those terrible days and awful nights of loneliness and unbearable uncertainty. She learned of the rash act of Serapatatia and did not know whether her mate had in sorrow destroyed himself or had been removed from the world for retribution for her misstep. And when Adam returned, Eve experienced a satisfaction of joy and gratitude that never was effaced by their long and difficult life partnership of toiling service.*

Time was passing, and Adam was not aware of the nature of their offense until around 70 days after the default of Eve, when the Melchizedeks returned to Urantia to take jurisdiction of world affairs; Adam now knew that he and Eve had failed. But there was more trouble brewing: the story of the annihilation of the Nodite tribe near Eden traveled fast, reaching the home tribe of Serapatatia to the north of the Garden. Within a short time, a vast army had assembled to march on Eden. Adam, Eve and their offspring were forced to leave the first Garden and migrate to what was called the second Garden in the Euphrates Valley. There was intense and prolonged enmity between Adam's seed and Eve's seed—that is, between the Adamites and the Nodites. Genesis 3:15: "And I will put enmity between thee and the woman between thy seed and her seed."

From that time forward, there always seemed to be some bickering in the Middle East. They have never had a peaceful situation that lasted any amount of time. The land appears cursed since the time of Adam and Eve. But with the knowledge we have today, this seeming curse can be alleviated if each human takes personal responsibility to shift his or her attitude towards life.

After Adam learned that the Nodites were on the march, he attempted to enlist the help of the Melchizedeks, but to no avail. They told him to do what he thought was best. They promised him their friendly co-operation as far as possible in whatever course he decided upon. The Melchizedeks were forbidden to interfere with the personal plans of Adam and Eve.

Adam had no tolerance for war and decided to leave the first Garden to the Nodites unopposed. On the third day of their journey, the Edenic caravan stopped with the arrival of the seraphic transports from Jerusem, the same type of transport that brought Adam and Eve to our planet. Seraphic transports are known in the higher worlds to travel thousands of miles per second.

As the seraphic transports stood by, Adam and Eve learned the fate of their children. Those children who had reached the age when they could make their own decision (age 20) in this matter, were given a choice: stay on Urantia with their parents or become wards of the Most Highs of Norlatiadek (the constellation to which our world belongs). Two-thirds of the group chose to go to Edentia and one-third elected to stay with their parents. All the children under 20 years old were taken to Edentia.

Those who witnessed the sorrowful parting of the Material Son and Daughter and their children realized that the way of the transgressor is difficult. The people in the caravan were very sad as they continued their journey. How could anything be more tragic? Adam and Eve came to our planet with high hopes; they were forced to leave the Garden of Eden in disgrace and separated from most of their children.

While the Edenic caravan stopped for the transport seraphim, Adam and Eve were told of the nature of their transgressions; they were advised concerning their fate. Gabriel appeared on our planet to announce their judgment. The verdict: both Adam and Eve were found in default; they violated the covenant of their trust as rulers of our planet. But while burdened with feelings of guilt, Adam and his mate were happy they were not found guilty of rebellion.

Before Adam and Eve left Jerusem, their instructors had fully explained to them the consequences of any departure from the divine plan. The angel Solonia said she warned the Edenic couple repeatedly of the consequences of any divergence. Solonia continues: [75:7.5] *Adam and Eve, like their fellows on Jerusem, maintained immortal status through intellectual association with the mind-gravity circuit of the Spirit. When this vital sustenance is broken by mental disjunction, then, regardless of the spiritual level of creature existence, immortality status is lost. Mortal status followed by physical dissolution was the inevitable consequence of the intellectual default of Adam and Eve.*

Adam and Eve now fell from their high estate of Material Son and Daughter of God down to the lowly status of a human, but that was not the fall of humanity. Humanity was somewhat uplifted despite the immediate consequences of Adam and Eve's default. Although the divine plans for the Violet race miscarried, we humans still benefited tremendously from the genetic contribution of Adam, Eve, and their children who decided to remain on earth with their parents.

The Star Children The History Channel's "Ancients Aliens" talks about in season 1 episode 1 were descendants of Adam and Eve's children. Adam and Eve's descendants are the gods they spoke of that had children by the evolutionary humans. Those children of Adam and Eve were so advanced our ancient ancestors called them gods. And when they had children by humans in some parts of North and South America, those children were called star children. Each culture had a different name for them, and those children were so advance they became head of the tribes when they grow up. Remember, the Greeks claimed they were

descendants of gods, and their people remembered they were the offspring of Adam and Eve's descendants.

Adam and Eve's descendants went all over the globe spreading their superior genes and building megalithic structures, as mentioned one reason was to help civilize our ancestors through discipline and cooperation. Through inbreeding, with Adam and Eve descendants, our ancestors were civilized.

The History Channel's "Ancient Alien" season 1 episode 1-2 mentioned how scientists in many fields are puzzled about how humans brain power suddenly increased three-fold around six to seven thousand years ago, but it started long before that. After thousands of years, Adam and Eve's genes merged with the evolutionary races of humanity, and they were no more, but if you look, you will see them in the civilization of humanity, they were the ancient aliens The History Channel been looking for. This is something we all should be grateful for.

We need to count our blessings and imagine what life on our planet would have been like without their contributions. There was no "fall of man." The history of humanity has been that of progressive evolution. Although Adam, Eve and their children left our world improved, they were not perfect; otherwise, they would not have been able to sin. All things are in a state of change, but it all depends on what level one begins. If every being started at the same level, this would be a sorry universe! At the end of this paper Solonia the Seraphim writes:

[75:8.7] If this were only a mechanistic universe, if the First Great Source and center were only a force and not a personality, if all creation were a vast aggregation of physical matter dominated by precise laws characterized by unvarying energy action, then might perfection obtain, even despite the incompleteness of universe status. There would be no disagreement; there would be no friction. But in our evolving universe of relative perfection and imperfection, we rejoice that disagreement and misunderstanding are possible, for thereby is evidence of the fact and the act of personality in the universe. And if our creation is an existence domination by a personality, then can you be assured of the possibilities of personality survival, advancement, and achievement; we can be confident of personality growth, experience, and adventure. What a glorious universe in that it is personal and progressive, not merely mechanical or even passively perfect.

Chapter 6

The Second Garden

Adam's decision to leave the first Garden occurred virtually without opposition; Adam and his followers could not journey west on the Mediterranean Sea, as the Edenites had no boats for such an adventure. They couldn't go north because the Nodites were already on the march towards Eden. They were afraid to go south because the hill areas were saturated with hostile tribes. Their only option was to go east to Mesopotamia. Adam and his followers took the road eastwards towards a pleasant region between the Tigris and Euphrates Rivers.

Both Cain and Sansa were born before the Adamic caravan reached their new home between the Tigris and Euphrates Rivers. Laotta, the mother of Sansa, died giving birth to her daughter, Eve who suffered a great deal but survived due to her superior strength. Eve took Sansa, the child of Laotta, and raised Sansa as her child along with Cain. Sansa became a beautiful woman with exceptional abilities. She married Sargan, ruler of the northern Blue race, and contributed greatly to the advancement of that race.

It took the Adamic caravan almost a year to reach the Euphrates River, and they found it at flood tide. Adam and his group camped on the plains of the Euphrates for six weeks before they could cross to the land between the rivers which would become the second Garden. When word reached the tribe, who occupied the area between the rivers that the king and high priest of the Garden of Eden were marching on them, they swiftly fled to the eastern mountains. Thus, when Adam and company reached the land of desire, they found the territory vacant.

Adam and his followers immediately began to build their new homes and establish a new center of culture and religion. Ironically, this site was one of the original three locations proposed by the committee assigned by Van and Amadon to search for the site for the first Garden. The two rivers provided good natural defenses against invaders. A short distance north of the second Garden, the Euphrates and the Tigris come close together; and there, the Adamites built a defensive wall extending 56 miles from river to river.

The dwellers in the new Garden had to adopt crude methods of living. The ground seemed as though it had been cursed. Nature was taking its course. The Adamites were forced to wrest a living from unprepared soil, and they had to deal with the realities of life. The first Garden was partially prepared for them, but they had to create the second Garden from the "sweat of their brow," as the Bible says.

Cain and Abel

Abel was born less than two years after Cain. Abel was the first of Adam and Eve's children born in the second garden, and when Abel reached the age of 12, he decided he wanted to be a herder, while his half-brother Cain selected agriculture as his vocation. In those days, it was the custom to give offerings to the priesthood. Herders would give of their flock, while farmers gave the fruits of the land; and according to this custom, Cain and Abel gave periodically. The two boys had many arguments about who had the best vocation. Abel noted the priests' preference for his animal sacrifices. In the first Garden, where Adam and

Eve and their offspring lived as vegetarians, it had been the fruit of the fields that the priests reckoned more important, compared to the animals. But tradition had now changed.

Cain tried to rekindle the fruits as a more important sacrifice, but his efforts failed, and his younger brother taunted him about it. In the first Garden, where Adam had tried to discourage the offering of animal sacrifice, Cain would have had a legitimate argument. It was, however, difficult to organize the religious life in the second Garden. Adam was overburdened with a thousand tasks organizing the work of building, defense and agriculture, so he left the spiritual matters of the Garden to the Nodites priests who followed him from the first Garden. In a short time, those Nodites priests reverted to the rules of pre-Adamic times and accepted animal sacrifices.

Cain and Abel never got along, and the animal sacrifice controversy further contributed to their hatred of each other. Abel knew he was the son of both Adam and Eve, and always taunted Cain that Adam was not his father. Cain was not wholly of the Violet race, as his father was of the Nodite race that later mixed with the Blue man, the Red man and the original Andonic stock. Cain had developed a pugnacious attitude which caused him to nourish an increasing hatred for his younger brother. One day, when Abel was 18 and Cain was 20, Abel's ridiculing so infuriated Cain that he turned on Abel and slew him.

Adam and Eve knew something was wrong when Abel's dogs brought the livestock home without their master. Cain's murder of their son Abel reminded Adam and Eve of their folly, and they encouraged Cain in his decision to leave the Garden.

Cain's life in the Mesopotamian Garden was not easy since he was in a way symbolic of the default. It was not that the people in his environment were unkind to him, but he was somehow aware of their unconscious resentment. Cain knew that if he left the garden without tribal markings, the neighboring tribesmen would try to kill him, so he had a mark placed on his forehead. Later fear and some remorse led him to repent. Somehow, Cain reached the land of Nod east of the second Eden. (Genesis 4:8-17,) of the Bible, tells the tale:

"And Cain talked with Abel his brother: and it came to pass when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother and slew him. And the Lord said unto Cain, where is Abel thy brother? And he said, I know not: Am I my brother's keeper? And he said, what hast thou done? The voice of thy brother's blood crieth unto me from the ground. And now art thou cursed from the earth, which hath opened her mouth to receive thy brother's blood from thy hand.

"When thou tillest the ground, it shall not henceforth yield unto thee her strength; a fugitive and a vagabond shalt thou be in the earth. And Cain said unto the Lord, my punishment is greater than I can bear. Behold, thou hast driven me out this day from the face of the earth; and from thy face I shall be hid; and I shall be a fugitive and a vagabond in the earth; and it shall come to pass, that every one that findeth me shall slay me. And the Lord said unto him, therefore whosoever slayeth Cain vengeance shall be taken on him sevenfold. And the Lord set a mark upon Cain, lest any finding him should kill him.

"And Cain went out from the presence of the Lord, and dwelt in the land of Nod, on the east of Eden. And Cain knew his wife; and she conceived, and bare Enoch: and he built a city, and called the name of the city, after the name of his son, Enoch."

Today we know that God doesn't mark anyone's forehead. I'm confident it was Adam who expelled Cain from the Garden of Eden and marked his forehead to protect him on his journey. The original cuneiform may have called Adam the lord of the Garden or the god of the Garden; however, the Jewish religion does not call anyone lord or god but the Lord God Almighty.

The Urantia Book states that Cain chose to live among one group of his father Cano's people and became a great leader. All his life Cain promoted peace between his division of

the Nodites and the Adamites. Cain married Romonia, one of his distant cousins, and their first son, Enoch, became the leader of the Elamite Nodites. For hundreds of years the Elamites and the Adamites continued to be at peace, and it seems that Serapatatia's dream had come true after all.

The Bible claims Adam and Eve were the first two people on earth, and Cain and Abel were their first two children. Genesis 4:16 say that after Cain killed Abel, he went to the land of Nod. The next verse, 17, says that Cain knew his wife and she conceived their first child, a son they named Enoch. But the Bible never mentions where Cain's wife originated. Was she already in the land of Nod? Whose daughter, was she? There are statements in the Bible that make one feel as though someone is trying to hide something and at the same time reveal all. Strangely, the Bible never mentions that Adam and Eve had any daughters until Adam was 800 years old (Genesis 5:4).

Life in Mesopotamia

As months and years passed in the second Garden, the consequences of the default took a toll on the dwellers. Adam and Eve missed the comfort, beauty, and serenity of the first Garden. They missed their children who had been sent off-planet to Edentia. It was distressing to see these once glorious beings reduced to ordinary earth mortals, but Adam and Eve bore their mortal status with grace and courage. Adam spent a great deal of his time training his children and their associates in civil administration, educational methods and religious devotion. Had Adam not taken this wise precaution, all hell would have broken loose following his demise.

Long before Adam and Eve died, they noticed that their children and followers had gradually forgotten the glory of the first Garden of Eden.

The Adamites chose their rulers hereditarily from the sons of the first Garden. Adam's first son, Adamson, founded a secondary center of the Violet race to the north of the second Garden. His second son, Eveson, became a great leader and administrator, and he was a tremendous help to his father. Eveson did not live as long as Adam, and his eldest son, Jansad, became the successor of Adam as the head of the Adamite tribes.

Seth was the oldest living son born in the second Garden. The ruler-priests originated with Seth, who was their first ruler-priest. Seth became very interested in improving the religious status of his father's people. The Sethite priesthood had a threefold purpose: religion, health, and education. The priests of this order were trained to preside over religious ceremonies, to practice as physicians and sanitary inspectors, and to act as teachers in the second Garden.

Adam and his followers had brought hundreds of varieties of seeds, bulbs, plants, and cereal grains to the second Garden from the first Garden. They also brought with them hundreds of domesticated animals. Because of this foresight, they had a significant advantage over the tribes around them. The Adamites far exceeded the surrounding tribes in cultural advancements and intellectual development. The dwellers of the second Garden had an alphabet, and they laid the foundations for much of what we enjoy today as modern science, art, and literature. In the land between the Euphrates and the Tigris rivers, they practiced the crafts of writing, metalworking, pottery making and weaving. They had a system of architecture that was not surpassed for thousands of years. The dwellings of the Violet race were ideal for their times.

The education system of the Violet race was excellent. The children took courses of training in agriculture, craftsmanship and animal husbandry, or they were trained to take on the threefold duties of a Sethite priest. Today, when we think of priesthood, especially the scandal-ridden priesthood of the Catholic Church, it is a mockery. The Urantia Book says

when we think of the Sethite ministry, do not confuse those noble and high-minded teachers of health, religion and education of the second Garden with the debased and commercial priests of the later surrounding nations. The Sethite religious concepts of God and the universe were more or less accurate. The healthcare for their times was excellent, and their methods of education have never been surpassed.

The spiritual as well as the physical vision of Adam and Eve were far more advanced than the surrounding tribes, even to our modern-day understanding. Their senses were much more acute than present-day humanity's senses. They were able to see midwayers, angelic hosts, and Melchizedeks as well as the fallen Prince Caligastia, who visited them several times. They were able to see such celestial beings over 100 years after the default. These special senses were not as prevalent in their offspring, however, and with each passing generation, their ability to perceive spiritual beings diminished. The superior children of Adam and Eve were not as susceptible to fear as are the evolutionary races of our planet. So much fear persists in our present-day races because our ancestors received so little of Adam's life plasma due to the early miscarriage of the divine plan for the physical uplift of humanity. Also, the cells in the bodies of Adam and Eve's children were much more resistant to disease than the cells of the evolutionary humans indigenous to our earth.

After they were established in the second Garden, Adam discussed with Eve the desirability of spreading more of his life plasm among the evolutionary races. With Eve's full support, Adam decided to leave behind as much of his life plasm as possible to benefit humanity. Eve agreed to head a commission of 12 on race improvement. Before Adam died, this commission had chosen 1,682 of the highest types of women on earth, and these women were impregnated with Adam's life plasm. The Urantia Book does not say how these women were fertilized. I doubt that Adam went to bed with all those women—they no doubt had some scientific method of impregnating those women, just as do scientists today. This is why UFO researchers and linguists interpret part of the Epic of Gilgamesh as extraterrestrials creating new species of humans. But the "extraterrestrials" were Adam and Eve trying to do all they could do to uplift the genes of humanity. Now, after thousands of years, Adam and Eve's genetic information has been significantly diluted. All except 112 of the children reached maturity, so the world benefited from an additional 1,570 superior men and women.

Although these segregated mothers were selected from all the surrounding tribes and represented most of the races on earth, most were chosen from the highest strains of the Nodites; their descendants were the beginning of the Andite race who were the ancestors of the Aryan race. These children were born and reared in the tribal surroundings of their respective mothers. The Aryan race was very advanced—Hitler claimed the Germans were their descendants; but as you can see, the Andites came from many different races and today their descendants are all over the world.

Death of Adam and Eve

[76:5.1] Not long after the establishment of the second Eden, Adam and Eve were duly informed that their repentance was acceptable, and that, while they were doomed to suffer the fate of the mortals of their world, they should certainly become eligible for admission to the ranks of the sleeping survivors of Urantia. They fully believed this gospel of resurrection and rehabilitation which the Melchizedeks so touchingly proclaimed to them. Their transgression had been an error of judgment and not the sin of conscious and deliberate rebellion.

Adam and Eve did not, as citizens of Jerusem, have Thought Adjusters, nor were they Adjuster indwelt when they functioned on Urantia in the first garden. But shortly after their reduction to mortal status, they became conscious of a new presence within them and awakened to the realization that human status coupled with sincere repentance had made it

possible for Adjusters to indwell them. It was this knowledge of being Adjuster indwelt that greatly heartened Adam and Eve throughout the remainder of their lives; they knew that they had failed as Material Sons of Satania, but they also knew that the Paradise career was still open to them as ascending sons of the universe.

Adam knew about the dispensational resurrection which occurred simultaneously with his arrival on the planet, and he believed that he and his companion would probably be repersonalized in connection with the advent of the next order of sonship. He did not know that Michael, the sovereign of this universe, was so soon to appear on Urantia; he expected that the next Son to arrive would be of the Avonal order. Even so, it was always a comfort to Adam and Eve, as well as something difficult for them to understand, to ponder the only personal message they ever received from Michael. This message, among other expressions of friendship and comfort, said: "I have given consideration to the circumstances of your default, I have remembered the desire of your hearts ever to be loyal to my Father's will, and you will be called from the embrace of mortal slumber when I come to Urantia if the subordinate Sons of my realm do not send for you before that time.

The words of Lord Michael were a great mystery to Adam and Eve. They understood a possible unique resurrection in Lord Michael's message, which excited them and brought joy to their lonely souls. But they could not grasp the statement that they would rest until the time of resurrection in conjunction with Michael's appearance on earth (Urantia). And so Adam and Eve always professed that a Son of God would come and they announced to their loved ones that hope—that the world of their blunders and sorrows might become the chosen realm where the ruler of this universe would function as a Paradise Bestowal Son. (A Paradise Bestowal Son is one of the Creator Sons of God who selects to be born as a man on an inhabited world as one of the seven initiations he must experience.) It sounded too good to be true, but Adam thought this strife-torn earth might turn out, after all, to be the most envied world in our local universe. Adam and Eve's descendants for thousands of years traveled the globe preaching the coming of Christ. That's the reason you see images of a woman with a baby in her arms in Egypt and other cultures long before Jesus appeared; these prophetic images were saying that a son of God would be born of a woman.

It's written in The Urantia Book that Adam lived 530 years on our earth and died of old age when his physical body wore out. Eve had died 19 years earlier of a weakened heart. They were each buried in the center of divine service that was built to their specifications soon after the walls of the second Garden had been completed. Thus, originated the practice of burying notable and important men and women under the floor of their place of worship. It's obvious that after Adam and Eve's deaths their descendants would say they were the first parents, and they were for that first generation of their children. But after thousands of years, through the evolution of legend Adam and Eve became the first parents of all humanity.

Survival of Adam and Eve

Adam and Eve went to their mortal rest with strong faith in the promise made to them by the Melchizedeks that they would sometime awake from the sleep of death to resume life on the mansion worlds, all so familiar to them in the days preceding their mission in the material flesh of the Violet race on Urantia.

They did not long rest in the oblivion of the unconscious sleep of the mortals of the realm. On the third day after Adam's death, the second after his reverent burial, the order of Lanaforge, sustained by the acting Most High of Edentia and concurred in by the Union of Days on Salvington, acting for Michael, were placed in Gabriel's hands, directing the special roll call of the distinguished survivors of the Adam default on Urantia. And in accordance

with this mandate of special resurrection number twenty-six of the Urantia series, Adam and Eve were depersonalized and reassembled in the resurrection halls of the mansion worlds of Satania together with 1,316 of their associates in the experience of the first garden. Many other loyal souls had already been translated at the time of Adam's arrival, which was attended by a dispensational adjudication of both the sleeping survivors and of the living qualified ascenders.

It didn't take long for Adam and Eve to pass through the worlds of progressive ascension (the mansion worlds) until they attained the citizenship of Jerusem, the planet of their origin, but this time, as members of a different order of universe personalities. They had left Jerusem as permanent citizens, a Son and Daughter of God. They returned as ascendant citizens, a Son and Daughter of Man. Adam and Eve were attached to the Urantia service of the system capital (Jerusem) where they were assigned membership among the four and 20 counselors who made up the advisory controlling body of Urantia (earth.) These counselors are the four-and-20 elders in Revelation 4:4 whom John saw sitting on the throne.

Thus, ends the story of Adam and Eve on our planet. Summing it all up, Adam and Eve contributed significantly to speeding up civilization and the accelerated biologic progress of humans. They left a high culture on earth, but it was not possible for this civilization to continue with an early dilution of the Adamic genetic inheritance and the eventual submergence of the Adamic culture.

When Adam's plans went astray, he and his family and followers had to leave the first Garden of Eden and were not allowed to take away the Tree of Life. When the Nodites invaded the Garden, they were told if they ate of the tree they would become as "gods." To their surprise, the Nodites found the tree unguarded. They ate freely of the fruits of the tree for years, but it did nothing for them. They were mortals of the realm, and they did not have the endowment which acted as a complement to the Tree of Life. They became enraged when they found they were not benefiting from the tree, and in connection with one of their internal wars, both the tree and the temple of the Eternal Father were destroyed by fire.

After Adam, and Eve, their children, and followers left the first garden, the Nodites, Cutites, and Sunitites occupied it. Later, it became the dwelling place of the northern Nodites who were against cooperation with the Adamites. These low-grade Nodites held control of the peninsula for almost 4,000 years after Adam had left the garden. In conjunction with the violent activity of the surrounding volcanoes and the submergence of the Sicilian land bridge to Africa, the eastern end of the Mediterranean Sea sank, submerging the entire Edenic peninsula beneath the waters. With this vast submergence of the coastline, the eastern Mediterranean was significantly elevated. This ended the most beautiful natural creation earth had ever known, but the sinking was not sudden. It took several hundred years to submerge the entire peninsula and the Garden of Eden was no more.

The Mansion Worlds

Upon completion of this chapter, my immediate goal is to give a little information about the mansion worlds Adam and Eve experienced. When Jesus was on our planet, he mentioned the many mansions in his Father's house. For him to mention them, they must have been of some importance. I didn't realize how important they are at our present stage of evolution until I read *The Urantia Book*. "In my Father's house there are many mansions. If it were not so I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you." John 14:2. Jesus knew all about the mansion world and was going to make sure everything was all right with our experience there. Before reading *The Urantia Book*, whenever I heard about the death of a small child or baby, I wondered what happened to the essence of that baby or child. After

reading about the subject in *The Urantia Book*, I was relieved to see the provisions made to rescue every soul.

The Higher Ones call the sphere dedicated to young children and babies the Probationary Nursery. These infant receiving schools are devoted to nurturing and training the children of time. Angels deliver the children to Higher Beings called guardians of destiny on the sphere that is dedicated to rearing these children. The children of ascending mortals are always re-personalized with the same physical status they had at the time of death; except they don't have reproductive organs. The children are re-personalized when one or both parents reach the mansion worlds; and the parents—despite their busy programs—can see their children periodically. The children are given every opportunity to choose the will of God as they would have on earth.

In the probationary world, the children are separated depending on whether they had an Adjuster or not. As I mentioned before, the Adjuster does not come to dwell in the minds of children until they are around six years old and have made their first moral decision. Children of pre-Adjuster age are cared for in family groups of five in ages ranging from infant to five, or until the Adjuster arrives.

The Adjuster-indwelt children and youth in this unique world are also reared in families of five, ranging from ages six to fourteen. Any time after sixteen, if the final choice has been made, they are transported to the first mansion world. The guardians of destiny, seraphim, take care of the youth in the probationary nursery just as they spiritually minister to mortals on our planet.

On the mansion worlds, we resume our lives where we left off before death overtook us. Humans from our planet will notice considerable changes. But had we been from a more normal world, where the prince of that world had not rebelled against God or their biological up-lifters had not defaulted, we would not notice much change.

Mansion World Number One

The center of activities on the first mansion world is the Resurrection Hall; here, we will find the enormous temple where the personalities of those who have died are reassembled. This massive structure is the meeting place of the seraphic guardians of destiny, the Thought Adjusters who indwell humans, and the archangels of the resurrection of the dead. Life Carriers also work in the resurrection of the dead.

The Thought Adjuster (the God within) transforms the mortal mind recordings and the active creature memory patterns from the material to the spiritual. These spiritual factors of mind-memory and creature personality become forever a part of the God within. The creature mind-matrix and passive potential of identity are present in the morontia soul that was entrusted to the keeping of the guardian of destiny. It is the reuniting of the morontia soul that was assigned to the seraphim, and the spiritual mind entrusted to the Thought Adjuster, that reassembles the human personality and constitutes the resurrection of a sleeping survivor.

From the Resurrection Hall, we newly resurrected souls proceed to the Melchizedek sector, where we are assigned permanent residence; and then we will be allowed ten days of personal liberty when we are free to explore the immediate vicinity of our new home and acquaint ourselves with the studies that lie ahead. We can also look up the registry and call upon our loved ones or other earth friends who might have gone to mansion worlds before us. At the end of the 10-day period of leisure, we begin the ascending steps to our Paradise journey. The mansion worlds are actual training spheres, not merely detention planets. When we die on earth and resurrect on the mansion worlds, mortal humans gain absolutely nothing aside from experiencing the fact of survival.

Mansion World Number Two

On the second mansion world, we are inducted into the morontia life. The different groups of morontia organizations begin to form in this sphere, and social groups take shape. Communities organize and the advancing mortals institute new and formal orders of self-government. Here, we also meet different orders of ascending life. For example, a mortal from our planet is considered a God-fused being—a being who can choose to merge with the God within. Beings from other planets are not all God-fused beings; some may be Son-fused or Spirit-fused beings. While the orders of celestial life may differ, they are all friendly. In all the Ascension life, we won't find anything that will compare to human intolerance or the discrimination of the caste systems that we have in our world. As we ascend higher into the mansion worlds, we find these worlds swarming with morontia life (half physical, half spiritual) such as the beings on Jerusem, the headquarters world of our local system, the higher world that is called heaven in the *Bible* and it is beautiful beyond our imagination.

Our morontia body is developed and adjusted each time we advance to a higher mansion world. We are taken to different worlds by seraphic transport. While we sleep we awaken with new fully developed bodies in the Resurrection Hall. It appears that each mansion world has its Resurrection Hall. Our Adjuster's memory remains fully intact as we go from one world to the other. The mind that was wholly animalistic perished with the physical brain, but everything else of value—the good we achieve in life, the love we give—is retained as part of the personal memory that stays with us all the way to the highest of universes and further to infinity.

Although we have morontia bodies that are more spiritual, we go through all seven of the mansion worlds eating, drinking, and resting. We partake of the morontia order of food, a type of energy unknown on our planet. The body fully uses all food and water, so there is no waste. From sphere to sphere, we grow less material, more intellectual and slightly more spiritual. Our spiritual growth is the greatest on the last three spheres of the seven progressive worlds we must traverse.

Biological deficiencies were, for the most part, taken care of on the first morontia world. Mansion world number two, more precisely, provides for the removal of all phases of mental hang-ups and cures all types of mental conflicts.

Mansion World Number Three

The Higher Ones call the mansion worlds mansonia, and the third mansonia is the headquarters for the mansion world teachers. There are millions of these advanced teachers on the mansions and higher morontia worlds. These glorified cherubim angels serve as morontia teachers on the mansion worlds all the way up to the last sphere of our local universe. They will be some of the last to give us an affectionate goodbye when we leave our system for a few ages on our way to super worlds.

When we reach the third mansion world, we are granted a permit to visit the third transition sphere. (There appears to be a transition world for each mansion we ascend, and we get the opportunity to visit them.) The third transition sphere is the headquarters of the angelic order of teachers and the home of their various system training schools. We also can visit Jerusem (headquarters of our local system), where it is claimed you'll enjoy an incredibly beautiful life as I have mentioned. I have tried to portray for you, the reader, what these worlds will be like when we get there. It is great that The Urantia Book gives us a bird's-eye view of some of these higher worlds so that we can bask in vibrational thoughts of those worlds.

In this third world, positive educational work has begun. The training in the first two mansion worlds is to help us gain whatever we were deficient in from our life in the flesh; in other words, these two worlds serve to supplement the experience we lacked in the flesh.

On the third mansion world, survivors will begin their progressive morontia culture. The purpose of this training is to enhance our understanding of the relationship between morontia mota (wisdom) and mortal logic, the coordination of morontia, and human philosophy. (“Mota” is the wisdom of the morontia level of reality, the mindal mechanism for the comprehension of cosmic meaning and the interrelationship of the universe.) “Mindal” energy relates to the thinking process of the universe. (There are a few terms I struggled with in *The Urantia Book*. To understand a significant portion of the book, I sent for a glossary from the *Urantia Book Fellowship*. The third mansion is our real introduction to the intelligent comprehension of cosmic meaning and universe interrelationships.

Mansion World Number Four

Reaching the fourth mansion world, we are well on our way into morontia life. On this mansion, ascenders become familiar with the headquarters and training schools of the super-angels, including the Brilliant Evening Star. Through the office of these super-angels of the fourth transition world, ascended visitors can draw close to various orders of the Sons and Daughters of God during their periodic visits to Jerusem; here, new grandeurs are progressively unfolding to the expanding minds of ascenders.

It is on mansion world number four that ascending mortals are first introduced to the demands and excitement of the real social life of the morontia creatures. It is a new experience for ascendant beings to participate in social activities not based on personal exaggeration or self-seeking conquests. A new social order is being introduced—one based on understanding, empathy, appreciation of each other and unselfish love of mutual service. Ascenders go forward in mastering common goals of the worlds of Paradise. The ascenders are all becoming self-conscious of God-knowing, God-revealing, God-seeking, and God-finding.

Mansion World Number Five

Being transported to the fifth mansion world is considered a tremendous step in the life of a morontia progressor. The experience of the fifth mansion world is a real example of Jerusem Life. The culture of this world is probably comparable to our planetary development as it will evolve in the next 10 to 15 thousand years, especially if our spiritual awakening improves. All of this training is to prepare us for residential status on Jerusem. It was the duty of the Planetary Prince of this world and his staff, plus Adam and Eve, the planetary up-lifters, to prepare us for the higher realms. But because of the Lucifer Rebellion and the default of Adam and Eve, our planet lags far behind.

On the fifth world, we become proficient in several universal languages, as all ascending mortals are multilingual. We will also study the constellation world and will meet for the first time the instructors who will begin to prepare us for the constellation sojourn.

On mansion world number five, a real birth of cosmic consciousness takes place. Here, we become universe-minded. On earth during the last part of the twentieth century there was much talk about cosmic consciousness and many books were written on the subject. Mansion world five is where our horizon dramatically expands and we become aware of the grand and magnificent destiny that awaits all who complete the progressive Paradise ascension courses. It appears we have to go through a lot of studies; but I am sure those who want to go will have the opportunity, and if they choose not to, we have free will. We must realize those pilgrims are being prepared to rule universes yet in the process of being born.

Mansion World Number Six

Here, earth pilgrims receive their first lesson in the prospective spirit career, which follows immediately after graduation from the morontia training of the local universe. Here, we experience our initial instruction in techniques of universe administration. The first lessons introduce the affairs of a whole universe. This brilliant age is for ascending humans who experience the perfect fusion of the human mind and the divine Adjuster. In potential, this fusion could happen before, but the actual working together of the two minds is often not achieved until the mortal reaches the fifth or sixth mansion world.

Soon after the confirmation of Adjuster fusion, the new morontia being is introduced for the first time to their fellow beings by a new name (this is believed to be the name John spoke of in Revelation 2:17). After Adjuster fusion we ascenders are granted 40 days, which equal about 200 of our days, of spiritual rest from all routine activities when we commune with ourselves and choose from one of many optional routes to higher worlds and Paradise. Still, we are a long way from being true spiritual beings like the Higher Beings, although we are spiritually super-mortals and a little lower than the angels. But we are genuinely becoming beautiful creatures, and one day we will be far above the angels; that is when “the last will be first,” Luke 13:30.

During our journey on mansion world number six, students achieve a status that is comparable to the development of those evolutionary worlds which have settled in the the stage called Light and Life (upper stages humankind will reach in the distant future). The shadow of our mortal nature is growing less and less as we ascend these worlds one by one. We humans will become more adorable as we leave behind the coarse vestige of planetary animal origin. Rising through trials and tribulations helps us to become glorified mortals: kind and understanding, sympathetic and tolerant.

Mansion World Number Seven

Mansion world number seven is our crowning experience of the mansion worlds, where we will receive instructions of many teachers; and all will cooperate in the task of preparing us for residence on Jerusem.

If there are any discernible differences between mortals who came from isolated and retarded worlds (like ours) and those survivors from more advanced and enlightened worlds, it is virtually eradicated during the time spent on the seventh mansion world. Not all the planets in our universe followed Lucifer into rebellion. In this world, we will be cleansed of all residues of heredity unwholesomeness, environmental degradation, and unspiritual tendencies. The last waste of the “mark of the beast” is rooted out here (Revelation 20:4).

The formation of classes for graduation to Jerusem begins with this world. We have gone from one world to another as individuals; now, we prepare to go to Jerusem in groups. The personnel of the seventh mansion world assemble on the sea of glass to witness our departure for Jerusem with residential status. (The sea of glass is for spiritual beings what the airport is to us humans.) Hundreds of thousands of times we may have visited Jerusem, but always as a guest; now, we are headed for Jerusem, our local system capital, in the company of a group of our fellow graduates who are bidding farewell forever to the whole morontia career as ascending mortals. As we continue our journey, we will soon be welcomed on the receiving field of the headquarters world as Jerusem citizens.

On the first mansion world, we were mostly humans—a mortal being minus a material body. On the last mansion world, we are human minds occupying a morontia form—a substantial body of the morontia world—not a mortal of flesh and blood. We pass

from the mortal state to permanent status at the time of Adjuster fusion, and by the time we have finished the Jerusem career, we will be full-fledged morontians.

Jerusem Citizenship

After we have attained residence on the system headquarters, we will experience no more literal resurrections. The morontia bodies we receive after leaving the mansion worlds will be of service to us until we finish our local universe training. After our local universe training, we'll then experience the super cosmos and go on to Paradise. To we humans, this may seem like a great deal of practice, but one must remember we are talking about living forever; infinity is a long time. I would imagine this is what the metaphysicians mean when they claim that for the Higher Beings, there is no time; all is the now; there is no beginning and no end to eternity. Since we won't be in the same frame of mind we experience on this planet, one billion years may not seem long to us. The following information I quote for your benefit, the reader:

[47:10.1] *The reception of a new class of mansion world graduates is the signal for all Jerusem to assemble as a committee of welcome. Even the spornagia enjoy the arrival of these triumphant ascenders of evolutionary origin, those who have run the planetary race and finished the mansion world's progression. Only the physical controllers and Morontia Power Supervisors are absent from these occasions of rejoicing.*

John the Revelator saw a vision of the arrival of a class of advancing mortals from the seventh mansion world to their first heaven, the glories of Jerusem. He recorded: "And I saw as it were a sea of glass mingled with fire; and those who had gained the victory over the beast that was originally in them and over the image that persisted through the mansion worlds and finally over the last mark and trace, standing on the sea of glass, having the harps of God, and singing the song of deliverance from mortal fear and death.

"Spornagia" is an animal order of creatures responsible for the care and cultivation of the landscapes of the headquarters worlds in the local universe. The Urantia Book mentions that some of the animal creatures on higher worlds are very intelligent, friendly and loyal.

At this stage of our evolution on planet earth, we are not able to complete all of the necessary training to reach the higher worlds; death usually overcomes us before we get the required training. The purpose of the mansions is to give us the necessary training. In the far distant future, when humanity is more evolved, most of those mansion worlds will be unnecessary as far as our humanity is concerned. At that time, our understanding will have evolved enough for humanity to get almost all their necessary experience on earth, just as Enoch did. Humans will also live to reach the age of 150 or more.

Before this age, humankind will have learned to control their birth rate so there will not be an overpopulation problem. People in that age will be involved in learning about the higher worlds at least by age 40; then, by the time they have reached age 90 and beyond, they will be able to merge with the higher self while still on earth, and the physical body will vanish as Enoch's body did (the Bible said God took him). When people merge with their higher self while still on earth, death will be celebrated, not mourned, because people will know their loved ones are going to higher worlds and will continue to evolve.

Ascending Mortals

We human beings are considered ascending mortals. Those who come from the higher worlds are known as descending spirit beings. An example of this is Jesus Christ in his seventh initiation, descending from the higher realms as a Creator Son of God to be born into the lower state of a human being; when he had accomplished his purpose, he re-ascended to

his position as the ruler of our local universe. Many Higher Beings descend to earth and work in dimensions we humans are not capable of perceiving. We understand that some of them are guardian angels.

We ascending mortals start off as the lowest will creatures of God and then climb into higher worlds, thereby becoming God-willed beings, Sons and Daughters of God. The Higher Beings prove their worthiness by descending and helping us humans reach higher worlds. If it weren't for them, although we are not able to see them, we would make little or no spiritual progress. There are other types of beings on the higher worlds that are like the animal kingdom on our planet, and they don't have free will, nor do they have souls. The animals die out, and their remains disappear as evolved energy; the consciousness they did possess returns to nature with no recollection whatsoever of having been a creature.

[48:0.1] *The Gods cannot — at least they do not — transform a creature of gross animal nature into a perfected spirit by some mysterious act of creative magic. When the Creators desire to produce perfect beings, they do so by direct and original creation, but they never undertake to convert animal-origin and material creatures into beings of perfection in a single step.*

The morontia life, extending as it does over the various stages of the local universe career, is the only possible approach whereby material mortals could attain the threshold of the spirit world. What magic could death, the natural dissolution of the material body, hold that such a simple step should instantly transform the mortal and material mind into an immortal and perfected spirit? Such beliefs are but ignorant superstitions and pleasing fables.

Chapter 7

Adamson and Ratta

Adamson was the oldest son of Adam and Eve, one of the children who after the default decided to stay on earth with his parents. This oldest son often heard Van and Amadon tell the story of their highland home in the north. After helping his parents establish the second Garden, he was determined to go in search of the land of his youthful fantasy. Adamson was 120 years old at that time and had fathered 32 pure-line Violet race children in the first Garden. He wanted to remain with his parents and continue to assist with the second Garden, but he was very hurt by the loss of his mate and their children who had all decided to go to Edentia to become wards of the Most Highs. (Edentia is the headquarters of Norlatiadek, the constellation to which our system belongs.)

Adamson did not want to desert his parents, nor to flee from hardship or danger, but for him, life in the second Garden was far from satisfying. Adamson made significant efforts to increase the defense and construction of the second Garden. When he decided to leave for the North, his departure was somewhat pleasant, but his parents grieved at losing their oldest son to a strange and hostile land. Adam and Eve feared Adamson would never return.

A group of 27 people followed Adamson northward in quest of the people of his childhood dreams. In about three years, Adamson and his group found the people he was seeking. Among those people, he found a beautiful young woman who claimed she was the last pure-line descendant of the Prince's staff. This woman, Ratta, said her ancestors were all descendants of two of Prince Caligastia's staff. She was the last of her race as she had no sisters or brothers. She had decided not to mate and not to have any children, possibly because she may have felt guilty about her ancestors' rebellion. After seeing the majestic Adamson, she lost her heart. When he told her about the Garden of Eden and how the prediction of Van and Amadon had come true, she became possessed with one single thought: to marry this son of Adam. This idea occurred to Adamson also, and within three months, they married. The two were superhuman beings, and they had 67 children. These children were the origin of a great line of world leaders, and their offspring helped to make up the Assyrian people.

Adamson lived 369 years; he returned to visit his mother and father many times. Every seven years, Adamson and Ratta journeyed south to visit the second Garden. Adamson also had the midwayers who kept him informed concerning the status of his people.

During Adamson and Ratta's long lives, they performed excellent services in building a new and independent world center for truth and righteousness. Adamson and Ratta had at their disposal a splendid corps of marvelous helpers who worked with them throughout their long lives. They promoted and advanced truth and spread higher standards of spirituality, intellectualism and natural living. Their efforts for world betterment were never really forgotten even though the world retrogressed. The offspring of Adamson and Ratta maintained a high culture for almost 7,000 years. Later, the Adamsonites mixed with the neighboring Nodites and Andonites, who were numbered "among the mighty of men." Some of the advances of that age continued and became an intrinsic part of the culture that later bloomed into the European civilization. (This information you'll find [77:5] in The Urantia Book.)

The Higher Beings state that the center of this civilization was in the region east of the end of the Caspian Sea near Kopet Dag. They claim that a short distance into the foothills of Turkestan is the vestiges of what was once Adamsonite's headquarters. A short distance from the place where Adamson's headquarters once stood, across the Caspian Sea into Turkey near what today is called Sanliurfa, Gobekli Tepe was discovered. These Neolithic archaeological ruins were first uncovered in the 1960s, but their significance wasn't truly realized until 1994. The site is in southeastern Turkey. This site is said to be 12,000 years old, and the oldest known civilization of very advanced people. I'm convinced that the people who once occupied this area were the distant descendants of Adamson.

Archaeologists have discovered several elongated skulls at Gobekli Tepe; The Urantia Book mentions [81:4.2] that Adam and his descendants had elongated heads. Another advanced civilized Neolithic site called Nevali Cori, said to be 8,000 years old, was discovered in the same area of Turkey as Gobekli Tepe but was unfortunately flooded by the waters of the Ataturk Dam. Long before Gobekli Tepe was discovered, The Urantia Book, published in 1955, mentioned that Adam and Eve's oldest son and his wife started a civilization in that area of Turkey thousands upon thousands of years ago.

Gobekli Tepe is 350 miles south of Mt. Ararat. At these highland sites, in a narrow fertile land lying in the lower foothills of the Kopet area, arose at different periods four different cultures fostered by four different groups of Adamsonites. The second of these groups migrated westward to Greece and the islands of the Mediterranean. Therefore in ancient times, the Greeks claimed they were the offspring of the gods.

Offspring of Adamson's descendants migrated north and west, entering Europe with the blended stock of the last of the Andites coming out of Mesopotamia; and they numbered among the Andites—Aryan invaders of India.

For nearly 30 thousand years, the second Eden was the cradle of civilization. In Mesopotamia the Adamites sent forth their progeny to the ends of the earth latterly amalgamating with the Nodites and Sangik tribes; the mixture of these races was known as the Andites, and this was the beginning of the Aryan race. Men and women who initiated heroic works came from this area and they enormously accelerated cultural progress on earth.

With all the knowledge the History Channel has accumulated about "Ancient Aliens," I have concluded that these apparently ancient "aliens" are beings who literally carried Adam and Eve's offspring from one continent to the other. I believe these beings were midwayers, who can intervene in the physical affairs of men and can come and go in and out of our dimension at will. It appears they had landing ports to accommodate them at some of these sites on other continents—for example, the Nazca Lines in Peru. The experts say that the Nazca lines couldn't be a runway—but who ever saw a UFO on a runway? All they were about was location. Our ancestors in the early days knew Adam and Eve's children were descendants of celestial beings and to them, they were the offspring of sons of God.

Below, I quote more from The Urantia Book so that you, the reader, will have a better understanding of the racial and cultural distribution of Adamite civilization on Urantia (earth).

Racial and Culture Distribution

[78:1.1] *Although the minds and morals of the races were at a low level at the time of Adam's arrival, physical evolution had gone on quite unaffected by the exigencies of the Caligastia Rebellion. Adam's contribution to the biologic status of the races, notwithstanding the partial failure of the undertaking, enormously up stepped the people of Urantia.*

[78:1.2] *Adam and Eve also contributed much that was of value to the social, moral and intellectual progress of mankind; civilization was immensely quickened by the presence of their offspring. But thirty-five thousand years ago, the world at large possessed little culture. Certain centers of civilization existed here and there, but most of Urantia languished in savagery. Racial and cultural distribution was as follows:*

[78:1.3] *1. The Violet race — Adamites and Adamsonites. The chief center of Adamite culture was in the second garden, located in the triangle of the Tigris and Euphrates rivers; this was, indeed, the cradle of the Occidental and Indian civilizations. The secondary or northern center of the Violet race was the Adamsonite headquarters, situated east of the southern shore of the Caspian Sea near the Kopet Mountains. From these two centers, there went forth to the surrounding lands the culture and life plasma which so immediately quickened all the races.*

[78:1.4] *Pre-Sumerians and other Nodites. There were also present in Mesopotamia, near the mouth of the rivers, remnants of the ancient culture of the days of Dalamatia. With the passing millenniums, this group became thoroughly admixed with the Adamites to the north, but they never entirely lost their Nodite traditions. Various other Nodite groups that had settled in the Levant were, in general, absorbed by the later expanding Violet race.*

[78:1.5] *3. The Andonites maintained five or six fairly representative settlements to the north and east of the Adamson headquarters. They were also scattered throughout Turkestan, while isolated islands of them persisted throughout Eurasia, especially in mountainous regions. These aborigines still held the northlands of the Eurasian continent, together with Iceland and Greenland, but they had long since been driven from the plains of Europe by the Blue man and from the river valleys of farther Asia by the expanding Yellow race.*

[78:1.6] *4. The Redman occupied the Americas, having been driven out of Asia over fifty thousand years before the arrival of Adam.*

[78:1.7] *5. The Yellow race. The Chinese peoples were well established in control of eastern Asia. Their most advanced settlements were situated to the northwest of modern China in regions bordering on Tibet.*

[78:1.8] *6. The Blue race. The Blue men were scattered all over Europe, but their better centers of culture were situated in the then fertile valleys of the Mediterranean basin and in northwestern Europe. Neanderthal absorption had greatly retarded the culture of the Blue Man, but he was otherwise the most aggressive, adventurous and exploratory of all the evolutionary peoples of Eurasia.*

[78:1.9] *7. Pre-Dravidian India. The complex mixture of races in India — embracing every race on earth, but especially the Green, Orange, and Black — maintained a culture slightly above that of the outlying regions.*

[78:1.10] *8. The Sahara civilization. The superior elements of the Indigo race had their most progressive settlements in what is now the great Sahara Desert. This Indigo-black group carried extensive strains of the submerged Orange and Green races. (I believe they were the people of Nabta Playa and today we know some of them as the Dogan).*

[78:1.11] *9. The Mediterranean basin. The most highly blended race outside of India occupied what is now the Mediterranean basin. Here, blue men from the north and Saharans from the south met and mingled with Nodites and Adamites from the east.*

[78:1.12] *This was the picture of the world prior to the beginnings of the great expansions of the Violet race, about twenty-five thousand years ago. The hope of future civilization lay in the second Garden between the rivers of Mesopotamia. Here, in southwestern Asia, there existed the potential of a great civilization, the possibility of the*

spread to the world of the ideas and ideals which had been salvaged from the days of Dalamatia and the times of Eden.

[78:1.13] *Adam and Eve had left behind a limited, but potent progeny, and the celestial observers on Urantia (earth) waited anxiously to find out how these descendants of the erring Material Son and Daughter would acquit themselves.*

I believe because of a climatic event called the Younger Dryas 12,900 to 11,700 B.C. people were forced to migrate, and many met in the Nile River Valley. The people of Gobekli Tepe covered up their temple area with debris and disappeared. Also, the advanced people of the Sahara Desert at Nabta Playa had to leave their area, and they too met at the Nile River Valley. People from Mesopotamia also migrated to the Nile River Valley. It was these people who started the Egyptian civilization and built the Sphinx. The ancient temple built in front of the Sphinx had pillars constructed in the same fashion and placed in the same order as those at Gobekli Tepe. This is excellent circumstantial evidence; the builders I believe were the same people who built Gobekli Tepe.

It is also evident that the colossal stone heads found buried in Peru and at the Olmec sites of Mexico were related to the advanced peoples of the Sahara Desert.

The hugeness of the statue and the serious look on his face indicates it's obvious the artists were trying to tell us something important. Why go through all the trouble to make a statue that weighed between 15 and 20 tons? They made sure there was no mistake in identifying their race before burying the statues. Check out the Olmec huge heads on the Internet.

Today some geneticists who are willing, to tell the truth are saying that Africans have very versatile genes, and that when these genes are mixed, their descendants are often very surprising. I sincerely believe that the statues were buried for future generations to tell us something about the genes of these people. How did these people—who have African features—get to South America? I think some of the people of the advanced Sahara Desert civilization were among the followers of the Andites (descendants of Adam and Eve), sailors who journeyed to South America thousands of years ago, and these advanced Africans started the Olmec civilization in Mexico. These people became advanced when their genes were uplifted thousands of years previously by Adam and Eve's descendants.

Because there are certain people who for whatever reason try to discredit the achievement of people of African descent, I quote The Urantia Book: [80:2.1-2] *The early expansion of the violet race into Europe was cut short by certain rather sudden climatic and geologic changes. With the retreat of the northern ice fields, the water-laden winds from the west shifted to the north, gradually turning the great open pasture regions of Sahara into a barren desert. This drought dispersed the smaller-statured brunets, dark-eyed but long-headed dwellers of the great Sahara plateau.*

The purer indigo elements moved southward to the forests of central Africa, where they have ever since remained. The more mixed groups spread out in three directions: The superior tribes to the west migrated to Spain and thence to adjacent parts of Europe, forming the nucleus of the later Mediterranean long-headed brunet races. The least progressive division to the east of the Sahara plateau migrated to Arabia and thence through northern Mesopotamia and India to faraway Ceylon. The central group moved north and east to the Nile valley and into Palestine. This section is suggesting that the advanced people of the Sahara Desert were involved in the establishment of the Egyptian civilization and the tribes of Palestine, the original Jews.

For thousands of years, the descendants of Adam and Eve sweated in their labors along the rivers of Mesopotamia, trying to solve their irrigation and flood control problems to

the south, attempting to perfect their defenses to the north, and striving to preserve the traditions and glory of the first Eden.

The heroism and leadership showed in the second Garden were unusual and constituted one of the inspiring epics of our earth's history. These beautiful souls never lost sight of the purpose of the Adamic mission—to infuse the world with their genes. They courageously fought off the influence of the surrounding and inferior tribes, while they willingly sent forth their sons and daughters in a constant stream as emissaries to the earth's people. If you watched The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens," you will see how successful the Adamites were. They built pyramids all over the world and at times, their custom of sending away their sons and daughters depleted their home culture; but always these remarkable people rehabilitated themselves. One of the ways to recognize Adam and Eve's descendants in different parts of the world is by their elongated skulls, with red, yellow or brown hair, found all over the world.

[76:4.1]: *Adam and Eve were the founders of the violet race of men, the ninth human race to appear on Urantia. Adam and his offspring had blue eyes, and the violet peoples were characterized by fair complexions and light hair color — yellow, red, and brown.*

[81:4.2]: *“Each of the Urantia races was identified by certain distinguishing physical characteristics. The Adamites and Nodites were long-headed.”* The Adamites were the descendants of Adam and Eve; the Nodites were the descendants of the people of the Land of Nod. For thousands of years, these two races mixed and became the Andites and later evolved into the Aryan and the very advanced Sumerian races. [78:5.7]: *One hundred and thirty-two of this race, embarking in a fleet of small boats from Japan, eventually reached South America and by intermarriage with the natives of the Andes established the ancestry of the later rulers of the Incas. They crossed the Pacific by easy stages, tarrying on the many islands they found along the way. The islands of the Polynesian group were both more numerous and larger than now, and these Andite sailors, together with some who followed them, biologically modified the native groups in transit. Many flourishing centers of civilization grew up on these now submerged lands as a result of Andite penetration.*

Easter Island was long a religious and administrative center of one of these lost groups. But of the Andites who navigated the Pacific of long ago, none but the one hundred and thirty-two ever reached the mainland of the Americas.

“Recently there was an article on the internet that states: People from Melanesia contain traces of DNA belonging to an unknown species, according to an exciting new computer analysis. Scientists say that Melanesians, people from a region in the South Pacific, contain DNA of an unknown human species in their genetic makeup.”

Today, you will find many blond-headed Melanesian children, some with blue eyes. The above quote mentioned the violet race. I would imagine the violet race was similar to the red and yellow races in intensity of color.

More recently, in addition to all the above information, there is the story of Father Carlos Crespi Croci who lived in the small town of Cuenca in Ecuador and died in 1982. “The story of Father Crespi is one of the most enigmatic stories ever told—an unknown civilization, unbelievable artifacts, massive amounts of gold, depictions of strange figures connecting America to Sumeria, and symbols belonging to an unknown language. The account of what occurred reveals once again a conspiracy to hide the truth from the eyes of the public.” This quote, taken from AncientOrigin.com, provides more information connecting the descendants of Adam and Eve to South America and an unknown civilization. You will learn that after the death of father Crespi all his artifacts were taken and hidden; no one ever saw them again. Once again Adam and Eve's descendants are revealed as the lost civilization.

The civilization, society and cultural status of the Adamites were far above the general level of the evolutionary races of the earth during the Adamite period. Only the old settlements of Van, Amadon and the Adamsonites were in any way comparable. The second Garden civilization is an artificial construction since it had not evolved as a normal civilization; and it was, therefore, doomed to deteriorate until it reached a normal evolutionary level.

Adam and Eve left a tremendous intellectual and spiritual legacy. After Adam's death the traditions of the second Garden weakened with the passing of millennia. The cultural level of the Adamites steadily deteriorated until they reached a stable reciprocal balance with the status of the surrounding people.

The Andite Race

Not long after the death of Adam and Eve, the Andite race became the essential blend for the pure-line Violet race, a mixture of Nodite and evolutionary people. But the Andites had a much more significant percentage of the Adamic race than our modern races. In general, the term Andite is used to indicate those people whose racial inheritance was one-eighth to one-sixth of the Violet race blood. The earliest Andites originated in the land next to Mesopotamia more than 25 thousand years ago, and they consisted of a blend of Adamites, Nodites, and the evolutionary races. Concentric circles of fading Adamic races surrounded the second Garden. And it was on the borderline of this racial melting pot that the Andite race came into being. These Andites continued to migrate until they circumnavigated the globe and discovered the last remote continent. They were the mixed descendants of Adam and Eve, and I believe "ancient aliens" took them from one continent to the other. After many years they became the Aryan race, the ancestors of the Sumerians. And I believe that these ancient aliens are the midwayers The Urantia Book mentioned: they live on earth, but in a spiritual dimension humans cannot see. I sincerely think these physical/spiritual beings are the ones the UFO researchers are trying to find. It appears that after Pentecost (see Chapter 3 to better understand Pentecost) the troublesome activities of the rebellious midwayers had ceased. Even the loyal midwayers were not to make open contact with humans, except on rare occasions.

Initially, the Andites were river dwellers who were accustomed to the rivers swelling and overflowing their banks at certain seasons. These periodic floods were annual events in their lives. But soon, new perils threatened the villages of Mesopotamia because of progressive geologic changes to the north. After the submergence of the first Eden, the mountains around the eastern coast of the Mediterranean and those to the north continued to rise. The elevation of the highlands greatly increased around 5,000 B.C. This, together with greatly accelerated snowfalls on the northern mountains, caused unheard of floods each spring throughout the Euphrates Valley. These floods grew increasingly worse; eventually, people of the river areas were driven from their homes to the eastern highlands. For almost one thousand years, scores of cities were practically deserted because of these floods. The Jews changed the story to a flood of the whole world to suit their purpose when the Babylonians captured them in B.C. 597.

The Hebrew priests had a difficult time trying to trace the Jewish race back to Adam and Eve; as their task was impossible, they did the next best thing. They abandoned those efforts and said, "Why not let the whole world drown in the time of Noah's flood?" So they falsified their history in order to trace Abraham to one of the surviving sons of Noah, making a connection to their era. The Higher Beings state in The Urantia Book that the tale of Noah and the universal flood was an invention of the Hebrew priesthood during the Babylonian

captivity. There never has been a global flood since life began on earth; the only time that water covered the whole earth was during the Archaeozoic age before land began to appear.

With the contradictions between the Bible and The Urantia Book we must do a careful analysis of the story of Noah and the Ark as told in the Bible. First, it would have been impossible for four men to build a boat that would carry two of every kind of animal in the world. A ship that size would have been gargantuan—a person would not have been able to see from one end of the ship to the other. In the Bible, Genesis 8:5: “And the water decreased continually until the tenth month when tops of the mountains were seen.” How could Noah and his sons procure enough food and water to last two of a kind of every animal in the world for ten months? If we give it a little thought, the whole story sounds ridiculous. How could the Western world believe a story like this for so many years and call themselves intelligent human beings? I know some will say that for God all things are possible. We must stop trying to use God to wiggle our way out of our stupidity. We must stop letting others use sorcery on us; for us to believe some of these stories, we must be under some spell.

The legend of Noah and the Ark is a story told in the third millennium B.C.E. in Mesopotamia, in an area called Sumer, where Iraq is located today. In 1872 George Smith, a British scholar, was studying cuneiform tablet fragments at the British Museum. See Samuel Noah Kramer “The World of Sumer.” These cuneiform fragments are now called the Epic of Gilgamesh. The cuneiforms were excavated from the ruins of an ancient city known as Nineveh in the land of Mesopotamia. Smith deciphered those cuneiform fragments and announced that one of those fragments told a story about a boat being built, a great flood, a bird being released to seek dry land as the tide receded, and a man, his wife, and family surviving the flood. All of England was in an uproar.

The Urantia Book claims that Noah was a winemaker who lived at Aram, a settlement near Erech in Mesopotamia during the flood times. Noah advised his neighbors to build their homes on boats, and they laughed at him. When the severe floods came, only Noah’s family survived.

From the stories found on clay tablets in Sumerian ruins, one can conclude that the Jews fabricated their history years after leaving Egypt as slaves. I recently read a book titled *The Bible Unearthed* by two leading scholars, Israel Finkelstein and Neil Asher Silberman. At the time their book was published in 2002, Israel Finkelstein was director of the Sonia and Marco Nadler Institute of Archaeology at Tel Aviv University, and Neil Asher Silberman was director of [Historical International for the Ename Center for Archaeology in Belgium]. They presented a dramatically revised picture of Israel and its neighbors. In their book, they argued that important evidence in diggings in Israel, Egypt, Jordan, and Lebanon suggests that many of the stories in the *Bible*—the wandering of the Patriarchs, David and Solomon’s vast empire—are just stories created by Jewish authors about 2,600 years ago in Judah—are not actual historical facts. I believe these Jewish authors found these stories when they stayed in Babylon around 597 B.C. The amazing thing about this book is that these two men are Jewish, and they set out to prove that most of the stories in the *Bible* were based on facts. Imagine their surprise when they found themselves face to face with the truth. I admire these two writers for bringing forth the truth as they found it, and not trying to sugarcoat the facts.

It is well known now that the Egyptians received much of their knowledge from the Sumerians. Moses gathered his knowledge from the Egyptians. When the Israelites left Egypt after many years of enslavement, their history was all but forgotten. Sometime after the Exodus, they took bits and pieces of Sumerian history as their own. The Sumerian

civilization had vanished around a thousand years earlier. The Israelites didn't have their own written language until a thousand years *after* the Exodus.

On December 3, 1872, Smith gave a public lecture on the Epic of Gilgamesh that sent shock waves through Europe. He questioned the authenticity of the Old Testament and asserted that the Sumerian Noah lived around 2,000 years before the Jewish people, about 2,900 years before the coming of Christ.

Robert M. Best wrote a book titled *Noah's Ark and the Ziusudra Epic*. Best writes about the flood in detail and explains why a global flood is physically impossible. A global flood would force the earth out of its orbit. If a worldwide flood destroyed all but one family in the Middle East, as reported in the Bible, how did other cultures know there was a flood? It's reported as many as 500 different cultures around the world have myths and traditions of floods. How would the people know there was a flood in their region if everyone was destroyed?

Of course, there have been devastating floods in different parts of the world. The Sumerian flood covered around 100 square miles. Even today, the Tigris-Euphrates Valley floods. In 1954, flooding, heavy thunderstorms, and torrential rains threatened Baghdad with destruction, submerging the lowland plains for hundreds of miles. A similar flood must have happened during the time of Noah, but it was blown out of proportion over the centuries. Look at the flooding we have today from disasters such as Hurricane Katrina and the Indonesian tsunami in 2004, when 120,000 people lost their lives.

The Mesopotamian flood completed the disruption of the Andite civilization. At the end of this period of deluges, the second Garden was utterly destroyed. The only trace of their former glory remained as the Sumerian culture. The vestiges of this venerable civilization are found in Mesopotamia between the Euphrates and Tigris Rivers, and in the northeast and northwest. Older remnants of the days of Dalamatia exist under the waters of the Persian Gulf, and the first Garden of Eden lies submerged under the eastern end of the Mediterranean Sea. So says The Urantia Book.

The Sumerians, Last of the Andites

The final Andites (Aryan) scattering broke the backbone of Mesopotamian civilization, but a small minority of the superior race remained in their homeland near the mouths of the rivers and became the Sumerians. Many thousands of years ago their ancestors become Andites by race, and they clung to the culture of the Nodites and the ancient tradition of Dalamatia.

It was during the flood times that the city of Susa greatly prospered. The lowland towns flooded and dilapidated quickly; the highland cities became headquarters for the arts and crafts of the day. With the later diminishing of the floods, Ur became the center of the pottery industry. The biblical Abraham came from the land of Ur. Alluvial river deposits had built up the ground around this area, so these settlements suffered less from flooding, and they had a better control system at the widening of the Euphrates and Tigris rivers. The Andites along the Euphrates and Tigris Valleys were peaceful grain growers; however, they were constantly plagued by barbarian raids from Turkestan and the Iranian plateau.

In time, these grain growing Andites of the Euphrates Valley faced a much worse invasion brought about by the increasing drought of the highland pastures. The highland herdsman and hunters owned many tame horses, and it was their possession of horses that gave them a military advantage over their wealthy neighbors in the south. In a relatively short period, they overran all of Mesopotamia, forcing the last waves of culture to migrate all over Europe, western Asia, and northern Africa.

These conquerors of Mesopotamia consisted of the better Andite strains of the mixed northern races of Turkestan, including some of Adamson's descendants. These less advanced but more vigorous tribes from the north were willing to assimilate the residue of the Mesopotamian civilization and developed into the mixed people found in the Euphrates Valley. They revived many stages of the passing civilization of Mesopotamia, taking up the arts of the valley tribes and much of the Sumerian culture. They even attempted to build a third Tower of Babel and later took on the term as their national name.

Although the barbarian cavalymen from the northeast overthrew the whole Euphrates Valley, they could not conquer those Andites who dwelt at the mouth of the river on the Persian Gulf. These Sumerians were able to defend themselves because of superior intelligence, better weapons, and the extensive systems of military canals which they built next to their irrigation systems of interconnecting pools. The people were united, and they had a uniform religion. They maintained their national integrity long after their neighbors broke up into city-states. None of the city-states were able to overcome the united Sumerians.

The invaders soon learned to trust and appreciate the peace-loving Sumerians as great teachers and executives of government. They were respected and sought after as teachers of arts and industry, directors of commerce, and civil rulers; their services were requested by nations to the north, from Egypt in the west, even India in the east.

After the breakup of the early Sumerian confederation, renegade descendants of the Sethite priests ruled the later city-states. These so-called priests referred to themselves as kings of the neighboring cities they had conquered. These priest-rulers could not work together or confederate, as each town was jealous of the other city's deity. Each believed its municipal god to be superior to all other gods, so they refused to be ruled by an ordinary leader.

Sargon, a priest of Kish, who proclaimed himself king and endeavored to conquer all of Mesopotamia and adjoining lands, ended the long period of weakly ruled priest-dominated city-states. Sargon's strong rulership ended, for a time, the city-state system in which each city-state had its municipal god and its ceremonial practices. After the break-up of this Kish confederation, there was an extended period of constant warfare between cities for rulership. The ruling city shifted among Sumer, Akkad, Kish, Erech, Ur, and Susa.

The Sumerians came to the end of their long and illustrious journey on our planet. Eventually they suffered a severe breakdown at the hands of the northern Suites and Guites. Legash, the Sumerian capital built on flood mounds, fell. Erech held out for 30 years after the fall of Akkad. By the time Hammurabi ruled (a famous law-giving king of Babylon), the Sumerians had been absorbed into the ranks of the northern Semites, and the Mesopotamian Andites passed from the pages of history. This was the end of the Aryan race, but their genes were spread throughout the world by their vigorous offspring.

The reader interested in discovering the historical truth about biblical tales might check out the History Channel episodes of "Ancient Aliens," season four, "The Greys." In this section we learn that in 1849, 6,000-year-old cuneiforms were found in the land known as Sumer, where Iraq stands

today. These cuneiforms are the earliest known human writings. They tell of visitors from other worlds called "Anunnaki" who settled on our planet and bred with the tribes of the earth. The Bible calls these people the sons of God, Genesis 6:4. They include the 60 who rebelled with Lucifer against the universe administration (mentioned in Chapter 3). All this happened thousands upon thousands years before the Sumerian era, and the information was already greatly distorted by the time the Sumerians arrived.

For example in the epic of Gilgamesh, the King List included 8 to 10 rulers who reigned for very long periods of time; these kingly administrators are said to have descended

from heaven, and some ruled for as long as 36 thousand years. The Bible identifies those so-called kings as the sons of God [Genesis 6:4] who had children by the daughters of men. The Urantia Book identifies 100 of these sons of God who came from Jerusem as the staff of the Planetary Prince: 50 men and 50 women. The Prince's staff were commissioned into ten groups of 10. Each group was responsible for spreading knowledge among Urantia's ignorant tribes; each group was presided over by one person. For example, the council for food and material welfare was presided over by Ang; thousands of years later the Sumerians called these long-lived educators and administrators "kings." Sixty of the Prince's staff rebelled along with Lucifer. The Tree of Life was taken from them, and without its sustenance they died as mortals; see Chapter 3 of this book to review this history. The Urantia Book shows us the divine plan of God the Father to send Sons of God to Urantia to help civilize the races.



The Olmec colossal heads are stone representations of human heads sculpted from large basalt boulders. They range in height from 1.17 to 3.4. meters (3.8 to 11.2 ft).



en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Melanesians

Melanesians of some islands are one of the few non-European peoples, and the only dark-skinned group of people outside Australia, known to have blond hair.

Salesian monk



- Father Carlos Crespi Croci was a Salesian monk who was born in Italy in 1891. He studied anthropology at the University of Milan before becoming a priest. In 1923, he was assigned to the small Andean city of Cuenca in Ecuador to work among the indigenous people.



Scientists Say Melanesians Carry DNA Of Unknown Species. Scientists say that Melanesians, people from a region in the South Pacific, contain DNA of an unknown human species in their genetic makeup. Ryan Bohlender told the annual meeting of the American Society of Human Genetics that the DNA was very unlikely to be Neanderthal or Denisovan – but is likely a third, unknown “human” relative.



mariobuildreps.com/Gobekli-Tepe-true-age

Archaeologists assert that Gobekli Tepe is roughly 12,000 years old. However, no facts are available that will support this claim other than personal opinions and associative and assumptive evidence gathered at the local scene. In addition, Gobekli Tepe was never covered with any kind of roof.

Chapter 8

Machiventa Melchizedek

I will now direct the reader's attention to the Urantia Book chapters about the Melchizedeks, especially the Melchizedek whom the Bible calls the Priest of the Highest [Hebrew 7:3]. "Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life; but made like unto the Son of God." And this tells us Machiventa Melchizedek came from a higher world.

[93:0.1] *The Melchizedeks are widely known as emergency Sons for they engage in an amazing range of activities on the worlds of the local universe. When any extraordinary problem arises, or when something unusual is to be attempted, it is quite often a Melchizedek who accepts the assignment. The ability of the Melchizedek Sons to function in emergencies on widely divergent levels of personality manifestation, is peculiar to their order. Only the Life Carriers share to any degree this metamorphic range of personality function.*

The Melchizedek order of universe son-ship has been exceedingly active on Urantia. A corps of twelve served in conjunction with the Life Carriers. A later corps of twelve became receivers for your world shortly after the Caligastia secession and continued in authority until the time of Adam and Eve. These twelve Melchoizedeks returned to Urantia upon the default of Adam and Eve, and they continued thereafter as planetary receivers and on down to the day when Jesus of Nazareth, as the son of man, became the titular planetary Prince of Urantia.

Following the default of Adam and Eve, although making progress intellectually, humanity was slowly becoming spiritually depleted. Around 3,000 B.C., the concept of God had grown very weak in the minds of humans. Urantia's twelve Melchizedek receivers knew about Lord Michael's impending plans to make Urantia the planet of his seventh and last initiation as Jesus Christ, but they didn't know when this would take place.

The twelve receivers discussed Urantia's situation thoroughly, the dimming of spiritual light on earth concerned them greatly, and they decided to petition the Most Highs of Edentia that some provision be made to maintain the light of truth on Urantia. The Most Highs ruled that the conduct of affairs on planet 606 (Earth) of Satania was entirely in the hands of the Melchizedek custodians. The twelve receivers then sought advice from the Father Melchizedek. He advised them to continue to uphold truth in the manner of their choice until the arrival of a bestowal Son, who would rescue the planetary title from forfeiture and uncertainty. The twelve receivers realized it was their responsibility to choose how best to strengthen earth's spirituality. One of the twelve receivers, Machiventa Melchizedek, volunteered to do that which has only been done six times in the billions of years of Nebadon's (our local universe's) history: to appear on our planet as a temporary man, to bestow himself on our planet as an emergency Son of World Ministry. They sought and received permission for the extraordinary venture from Salvington (headquarters of our local universe Nebadon). The incarnation of Machiventa Melchizedek was undertaken near what would become the city of Salem in Palestine. The Planetary Receivers, with the help of the Life Carriers, several Master Physical Controllers, and other celestial beings stationed on our planet during that time helped complete the materialization of this Melchizedek Son.

The Sage of Salem

According to the Higher Beings, it was 1,973 years before the coming of Jesus Christ when Machiventa Melchizedek incarnated on our planet. No human witnessed his materialization; he was first noticed by mortals on the day he entered the tent of Amdon, a Chaldean herder of Sumerian descent. The announcement of his arrival was the statement he made to this shepherd [93:0.1]: *I am Melchizedek, Priest of El Elyon the Most High, the one and only God.* When the herder recovered from his bewilderment, he drilled the stranger with questions, and he invited the Melchizedek to dine with him. It was the first time the Melchizedek ever partook of material food in his extended universe career the nourishment that would sustain him for the next 94 years of life as a human being.

That night, as they talked under the stars, the Melchizedek began his mission to reveal to Amdon the revelation of truth, the reality of the one God. He turned to Amdon and said; [93:2.3] *El Elyon, the Most High, is the divine creator of the stars of the firmament and even of this very earth on which we live, and he is also the supreme God of heaven.* Within a few years, Melchizedek had gathered around himself a group of believers, disciples who formed the nucleus that eventually became the community of Salem. He was known throughout Palestine as the Priest of El Elyon the Most High, and as the Sage of Salem; Salem was later called Jebus and evolved into Jerusalem.

In his appearance, the Melchizedek looked like the blended Nodites and Sumerian people. He was almost six feet in height with a commanding presence. He spoke the Chaldean language, plus several other languages. He dressed as did the Canaanites priests except he wore on his chest an emblem of three concentric circles, symbolizing the Paradise Trinity. Although the Melchizedek lived as the men of his time, he never married, nor could he have left offspring on our planet. His physical body resembled the human male, but in reality he was more like the specially constructed bodies of the 100 materialized members of Prince Caligastia's staff. The Melchizedek did not carry the life plasm of any human race. Nor did he have the Tree of Life to sustain him. If he had stayed on earth for a prolonged period, his physical mechanism would have deteriorated; therefore, he terminated his mission in 94 years, before his material body began to decline.

As the years passed, Melchizedek built his schools at Salem. He patterned them after the system developed by the Sethite priests of the second Garden. He taught his students the simple essential truth about God, and he didn't complicate things. To the ranks and files of his followers, Edentia was the heaven of the Most High God. But to the members of the Katro family whom he lived with for over 30 years, the Melchizedek taught many of the higher truths, and that family taught them to their offspring even to the days of their famous descendant, Moses, who received these teachings from his father's and mother's families. Melchizedek taught his followers what he thought they could grasp and assimilate. Today, many religious ideas about heaven, earth, God, and angels are not far removed from the teachings of the Melchizedek. This great teacher based his teachings on the one God, a universe deity, a heavenly Creator, a Divine Father. He taught the coming of a Divine Son in the flesh just as he had come, only this Son would be born of a woman; and that is why many teachers later emphasize that Jesus was a priest, forever after the order of Melchizedek.

The Melchizedek came to prepare the way and set the monotheistic stage for the bestowal of an actual Paradise Son of the one God whom the Melchizedek so vividly portrayed as the Father of all. He later presented to Abraham a God who would accept men on the simple terms of personal faith. When Michael appeared on earth as Jesus Christ, he confirmed all that Melchizedek taught concerning the Paradise Father.

The Salem Religion

Ceremonies of the Salem worshipers were very simple. Every member who signed or marked the clay tablet of the Melchizedek church committed to uphold to the following beliefs:

1. I believe in El Elyon the Most High God, the only universe Father and creator of all things.
2. I accept the Melchizedek covenant with the Most High, which bestows the favor of God on faith, not on sacrifices and burnt offerings.
3. I promise to obey the seven commandments of the Melchizedek, to tell the good news of humanity's covenant with the Most High to all men.

That was the entire creed of the colony; yet even that simple declaration was too advanced for the men and women of that period. They couldn't grasp the idea of receiving divine favor for nothing; salvation by faith alone was more than they could handle. The belief that humans were born under the forfeiture of the gods was deeply imbued into the fabric of their minds. They had been offering blood sacrifices to the priests too long to understand the good news that salvation, divine favor, was a gift from God to all who would believe. This atonement of sacrifice for God's favor was the same concept that was carried over to the early Christian religion by Paul. God loves his creation and doesn't need someone to be murdered to forgive us for our sins. We are forgiven when we obey His will. That takes nothing from Jesus he came to show the way. The Melchizedek said that Abraham believed halfheartedly, and even that was looked upon as righteousness. The seven commandments advocated by the Melchizedek were modeled after ancient Dalamatia's supreme law and were similar to the seven commands taught in the first and second Gardens. The Seven Laws of the Salem religion were:

You shall not serve any God, but the Most High Creator of heaven and earth.

You should not doubt that faith is the only requirement for eternal salvation.

You shall not bear false witness.

You shall not kill.

You shall not steal.

You shall not commit adultery.

You shall not show disrespect to your parents or elders.

No sacrifices were allowed within the colony, but the Melchizedek knew how difficult it was to stop long established traditions and customs; so he wisely offered the people a substitute, a sacrament of bread and wine in place of the older sacrifice of flesh and blood. But even this was not wholly successful. The different tribes had auxiliary centers on the outskirts of Salem where they continued to sacrifice burnt offerings.

Abraham himself resorted to this barbarous practice after he conquered the Chedorlaomer. He didn't feel entirely at ease until he had offered the traditional sacrifice. Melchizedek never entirely eradicated the propensity of his followers to offer burnt sacrifices.

Like Jesus, the Melchizedek had a one-track mind the fulfillment of his bestowal mission. He did not attempt to change the mores of his environment, nor did he try to change the sanitary habits of the world. He came to our planet to achieve two things: keep alive the truth of the one God and prepare the way for the mortal incarnation of a Paradise Son of the universal Father.

[93:4.16] *Melchizedek taught elementary revealed truth at Salem for ninety-four years, and during this time Abraham attended the Salem school three different times. He finally became a convert to the Salem teachings, becoming one of Melchizedek's most brilliant pupils and chief supporter*

The Selecting of Abraham

Melchizedek explained in his writings that it might be erroneous to speak of a “chosen people,” but it is not a mistake to talk of Abraham as a chosen *individual*. The Higher Beings *chose* to rely on Abraham to carry on the religion of one God as opposed to plural deities.

Palestine was chosen for Machiventa Melchizedek’s activities, because the Melchizedeks desired to contact a human family that had the potential for leadership. During the time of the Melchizedek incarnation, there were equally favorable people among other races of humankind. But these places were not as suitable for the appearance of Christ as was the eastern shore of the Mediterranean Sea. Palestine was chosen because it was centrally located for trade, travel and the civilization of the world.

For years, the Melchizedek receivers tell us that they had been observing the ancestors of Abraham, and they were confident that in certain generations they could expect offspring who were intelligent, initiating, sagacious and sincere. The children of Terah, Abraham's father, met these requirements in every way. Terah had two sons, Abraham and Nahor.

Initially Terah and his entire family were lukewarm to the Salem religion preached in Chaldea. They learned of the Melchizedek teachings through the preaching of Ovid, a Phoenician who went through Ur proclaiming the Salem doctrine. The Terah family had left Ur with the intention of going to Salem, but Nahor, Abraham’s brother, persuaded them to stay at Haran for some time before going to Palestine. Nahor had never met the Melchizedek, and in fact believed only half-heartedly in the Salem teachings. Only well after Abraham's family arrived in Palestine were they willing to destroy all the household gods they had brought with them and accept the one God of Salem.

A few weeks after this incident, Abraham's father, Terah, died. Melchizedek sent one of his students, Jaram, a Hittite, to deliver this message to Abraham and his brother. “Come to Salem, where you shall hear our teachings of the truth of the eternal Creator, and through the enlightened offspring of you and your brothers, shall the world be blessed.” [93:5.5]. Nahor did not truly accept the Melchizedek gospel, and he stayed behind and built a strong city-state that bore his name. Lot, Abraham’s nephew, decided to go with him to Salem instead.

Upon arriving at Salem, Abraham and Lot chose a hilly stronghold near the city of Salem where they could defend themselves against the many surprises attacks of northern raiders. During this time, the Hittites, Assyrians, Philistines and other groups were continually raiding the tribes of central and southern Palestine. Still, from their stronghold in the hills, Abraham and Lot made many visits to Salem.

Soon after they had established themselves near Salem, Abraham and his nephew, Lot, traveled to the Valley of the Nile to obtain food supplies, as there was a drought in Palestine at that time. During his short journey to Egypt, Abraham learned that a distant relative was serving on the Egyptian throne as the commander of two successful expeditions for the king. By the end of his journey, Abraham and his wife, Sarah, were living at the king’s court; but before leaving Egypt, his relative shared some of the spoils of his successful military campaigns. Abraham had to force himself to give up the honors of the Egyptian court and return to the spiritual work sponsored by the Machiventa.

The Melchizedek was revered even in Egypt, and when the full story told about the Melchizedek to the Pharaoh, he strongly advised Abraham to return to Salem and fulfill his vow to Salem. Abraham had high ambitions, and on the way back from Egypt, he talked to Lot about his plans to conquer all of Canaan and bring its people under the control of Salem. But Lot was more inclined to business; and after they had a little disagreement, Lot went to

Sodom to get involved in trading and animal husbandry. He didn't care much for the military or the herder's life.

When Abraham returned to Salem with his family, he began to work on perfecting his military plans. He was soon recognized as ruler of the Salem area and had united in alliance with seven neighboring tribes. Melchizedek had a difficult time restraining Abraham, who was all fired-up with zeal to go and round up all the nearby tribes with a sword that they might more readily accept the knowledge of the Salem truth.

But Melchizedek had always maintained a peaceful relationship with the surrounding tribes. He was not militant and was never attacked by any of the armies as they moved to and fro. He was all for Abraham developing a strategy for the defense of Salem, but he would not approve of Abraham's eager desire to conquer; Abraham and Melchizedek had a friendly relationship. So, Abraham went to Hebron to establish his military capital.

Because of his close connection with Melchizedek, and the notoriety of Melchizedek, Abraham possessed an advantage over the surrounding petty kings; they all revered the Melchizedek and feared Abraham. He knew of their fear and waited for an opportunity to attack his neighbors. His chance came when some of those rulers were assumed to have raided the property of his nephew Lot, who lived in Sodom. After hearing about the raid on his nephew, Abraham, and his army of about 4,000 attacked the rulers of those small cities.

When Melchizedek found out about Abraham's intention to go to war, he tried to dissuade him but got caught up with his former disciple's victorious return from the battle. Abraham proclaimed that the God of Salem gave him his victory and insisted on giving a tenth of his spoils to the Salem treasury. The other 90 percent, he moved to his capital, Hebron. After his battle with Siddim, Abraham became ruler of the second federation of 11 tribes; he not only paid tithes to Melchizedek, but he made sure that others in the vicinity did the same. Abraham's political dealings with the King of Sodom, and with the fear that he generally held for Abraham, resulted in the King of Sodom and others joining the Hebron military confederation; Abraham was well on his way to establishing a powerful state in Palestine.

Melchizedek Covenant with Abraham

Abraham envisioned the conquering of all, of Canaan. But his determination was weakened because the Melchizedek would not sanction his plans; Abraham gave it much thought and decided to go on with his policies, but then suddenly a thought occurred to him that he had no son to succeed him as ruler of his purpose empire. It began to trouble him. He arranged a meeting with Melchizedek; and it was during these proceedings that the Priest of Salem, the visible Son of God, induced Abraham to abandon his desire for material conquest and earthly rule in favor of the spiritual concepts of the kingdom of heaven. So, Melchizedek made an official agreement with Abraham in Salem. Said he to [93: 6.3] *Abraham: "Look up to the heaven and number the stars if you are able, so numerous will your seed be."* And Abraham believed Melchizedek, *"and it was counted to him as righteousness."* And then Melchizedek told Abraham the story of the future occupation of Canaan by his offspring after their sojourn in Egypt.

This covenant of Melchizedek with Abraham represents the great Urantian agreement between divinity and humanity whereby God agrees to do everything; man only agrees to believe God's promises and follow his instructions. Heretofore it had been believed that salvation could be secured only by works — sacrifices and offerings; now, Melchizedek again brought to Urantia the good news that salvation, favor with God, is to be had by faith. But this gospel of simple faith in God was too advanced; the Semitic tribesmen subsequently preferred to go back to the older sacrifices and atonement for sin by the shedding of blood.

It wasn't long after he agreed to the covenant with the Melchizedek, that Abraham's son, Isaac, was born as the Melchizedek had promised. Abraham took the agreement he made with the Melchizedek very seriously. He went to Salem to have it put in writing, and it was at this formal acceptance of the covenant where he officially changed his name from Abram to that of Abraham.

Following Abraham's public surrender of his ambition for the more extensive plans of the Melchizedek, three celestial beings appeared to him on the planes of Mamre. The writer of *The Urantia Book*, states that this was a factual appearance, but the association of those celestial beings to the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah was a fabrication; it was a natural disaster. The legend was an indication of how immoral and unethical the people were.

After the completion of the Salem Covenant between Melchizedek and Abraham, the reconciliation between them was final. Abraham returned to Salem and resumed his military leadership of the Salem colony, which at its height, carried 100,000 tithes payers on the role of the Melchizedek brotherhood. Abraham improved the temple and provided new tents for the entire school. He did a great job in the overall improvement of the functioning of Salem. He was a shrewd businessman, a wealthy man for his times; but he was also sincere and believed Machiventa Melchizedek.

Those Higher Beings mentioned in their writings that we understand little of the difficulty to forge the truth during those earlier days, it is extremely easy for early humans to lose interest in new doctrines from one generation to another. There was always the tendency for the new doctrines to become absorbed into the old body of religious teachings and magical practices. Old evolutionary beliefs always contaminated a new revelation.

The Departure of Melchizedek

Right after the destruction of Sodom and Gomorrah, Machiventa Melchizedek decided to end his emergency bestowal on our planet earth. One of the main reasons the Melchizedek agreed to terminate his journey in the flesh was the tendency of the surrounding tribes to regard him as a demigod. They looked upon him as a supernatural being, which he was. They showed him unnecessary reverence with superstitious fear. He also wanted to leave in enough time before Abraham's death so that the truth of the one God would become firmly established in the minds of his followers.

As the story goes, one night Melchizedek retired to his tent at Salem after telling his friends good night and when they called upon him the next morning, he was not there. It was difficult for Abraham to accept Melchizedek's sudden disappearance. He had warned his followers that one day he would return from whence he had come, but they were not able to cope with the loss of this wonderful leader. The excellent organization that was built at Salem almost disappeared, though the tradition of these days is what Moses built upon when he led the Hebrew slaves out of Egypt. The loss of Melchizedek brought sadness over Abraham that he never really overcame. He had abandoned Hebron when he gave up the idea of building a material kingdom; now, with the loss of his great spiritual leader, he had less ambition to create a spiritual one. He left Salem and went south to be near his interests in Gerar.

It wasn't long before Abraham overcame his despair and he soon took up his mission as successor of Melchizedek. Shortly after his recovery, he made converts among the Philistines, and he signed a treaty with the Abimelech people. During the closing years of his life, he returned to Hebron, the place of his earlier activities with the Melchizedek. Abraham's last act was to send several of his servants to the city of his brother, Nahor, on the border of Mesopotamia, to escort a woman of his people as a wife for his son, Isaac. It was the custom

of Abraham's people to marry their cousins. Abraham died with confidence in his faith in God that he learned from Melchizedek in the vanished school of Salem.

The teachings of Melchizedek were nebulous for the next generations; within 500 years, they regarded the whole story as a myth. Although Isaac had clung to his father's teachings and fostered the gospel of the Salem colony, it was harder for Jacob (Isaac's son), to grasp the significance of those traditions. Joseph (Jacob's son) was a firm believer in the teachings of Melchizedek. His belief was one of the main reasons his brother called him a dreamer. Joseph's high regard in Egypt was due to the memory of his great-grandfather, Abraham. In fact, Joseph was offered the military command of the Egyptian armies because of his belief in the teachings of the Melchizedek, but he declined the position and, instead, elected to serve as civil administrator. He believed he could advance the course of heaven in this position.

Melchizedek's teachings were, replete so much so that the Hebrew priests found those records fantastic and almost impossible to believe. Quite a few of these priests had some understanding of the teachings until the time of the mass editing of the Old Testament records in Babylon. For example, when the Old Testament mentioned a conversation between Abraham and God, it was, in reality, a conversation between the Melchizedek and Abraham. Those Hebrew scribes regarded the term Melchizedek as synonymous with God; even the many contacts between Abraham, Sarah and "the angels of the Lord" were referring to their many meetings with Melchizedek. Those Higher Beings say the narratives of Isaac, Jacob and Joseph are much more reliable than those about Abraham, even though they contain many diversions from the facts, alterations made were purposely, but others unintentional at the time of the compilation of those records by the Hebrew priests during the Babylonian captivity.

All of Abraham's property went to Isaac, the son of Sarah, the status wife. Abraham was not as old as the records say, and his wife Sarah was much younger than the Bible claims she was. Their age was deliberately altered to claim the subsequent alleged miraculous birth of Isaac.

During the time of the Babylonian captivity, the national ego of the Jewish people was very depressed. To ease the pains of their guilty feelings of national inferiority, they went to the other extreme of national and racial egotism, where they distorted and perverted their tradition with the intent of exalting themselves as chosen people of God above all races. They carefully edited all of their records to raise their national leaders high above all other persons, even to Melchizedek himself. As such, the Hebrew scribes destroyed all the documents about the meetings of Abraham and Melchizedek, keeping only information about the Battle of Siddim, which they felt reflected great honor upon Abraham. As a young man, I often wondered why the Bible was so confusing in some places. Now I know.

In losing the teachings of the Melchizedek, they also lost the information about an emergency Son that was to come. They lost sight of the nature of the Melchizedek mission so thoroughly and completely that very few of their progeny were able or willing to recognize or accept Michael when he appeared on our planet as Jesus Christ, as the Melchizedek had foretold. Those Higher Beings mentioned in their writings that there was one writer of the book of Hebrews who understood the mission of the Melchizedek he wrote: [93:9.11] *But one of the writers of the Book of Hebrews understood the mission of Melchizedek, for it is written: "This Melchizedek, priest of the Most High, was also king of peace; without father, without mother, without pedigree, having neither beginning of days nor end of life but made like a Son of God, he abides a priest continually." This writer designated Melchizedek as a type of the later bestowal of Michael, affirming that Jesus was "a minister forever on the order of Melchizedek." While this comparison was not altogether fortunate, it was literally true that*

Christ did receive provisional title to Urantia “upon the orders of the twelve Melchizedek receivers” on duty at the time of his world bestowal. See [Hebrews 7:3].

During the years of Machiventa incarnation, the Urantia Melchizedek Receivers functioned as 11. When Machiventa realized his mission as emergency Son was finished, he signaled this fact to his 11 associates, and they immediately made ready the procedure whereby he was to be released from the flesh and safely restored to his original Melchizedek status. And on the third day, after his disappearance from Salem, he appeared among his 11 fellows of the Urantia assignment and resumed his interrupted career as one of the planetary receivers of 606 (earth) of Satania (the administration system which our planet belongs). But the Melchizedek continued to show interest in the affairs of those men, women, and descendants who believed in his teachings when he was in the flesh. The descendants of Abraham through Isaac as his offspring intermarried with the Kenites, who were the only line which continued to nourish any clear concept of the Salem teachings. Those Super Beings write that this same Melchizedek continued to collaborate throughout the 19 centuries with the many prophets and seers, trying to keep alive the truth of Salem until the time of the appearance of Christ. The Hebrew scribes claimed that it was God who appeared to those prophets and seers, while all the time it was the Melchizedek, we know now that God will not make an appearance to anyone; we should know by now that God is infinity. Those Jewish scribes used God so that others would look upon their race as miraculous people.

Chapter 9

Yahweh, God of the Hebrews

In his limited understanding of deity, man first included all the gods into his tribal deity. Then he subordinated all foreign gods to his tribal deity, and he eventually eliminated all but the Supreme, the God of all. The Jews synthesized all their gods into the concept of the Lord God of Israel. As man expanded his consciousness, so did his gods evolve. Ideas of monotheism matured all over the world not long after the appearance of Melchizedek at Salem in Palestine. Unlike the evolutionary philosophy of including, then subordinating, and finally excluding all gods but one, the Melchizedek understanding of deity was based on creative power, and soon influenced the highest concepts of Mesopotamia, India, and Egypt.

The Melchizedek religion was honored as a tradition by the Kenites and several other Canaanite tribes. One reason for the Melchizedek incarnation was that a religion of one God should be nourished to prepare the way for the earthly manifestation of a Son of the one God. Christ could hardly come to earth until humanity believed in Christ's Father, the Universal Father.

The religion of Salem continued among the Kenites in Palestine; their creed was later adopted by the Hebrews, who were first influenced by Egyptian moral teachings, then by Babylonian theology, and, lastly, by Iranian conceptions of good and evil. The Hebrew religion was based on the covenant between Melchizedek and Abraham. The Hebrew religion was the evolutionary outgrowth of many unique situational circumstances; culturally, it borrowed freely from the religions, morality and philosophy of the entire Levant. In other words, it was through the Hebrew religion that most of the morality and spirituality of Egypt, Mesopotamia, and Iran were transmitted to the West.

Deity Concepts among the Semites

The early Semites regarded everything as being indwelt by a spirit. They imagined spirit in the animals, plants, water and air—a whole pantheon of spirits to be feared and worshiped. The teachings of Melchizedek about a universal Creator never really destroyed Semitic belief in the low spirits or nature gods. How living beings moved, acted or performed caused the Semites to visualize in their limited state of consciousness that something in those particular beings caused them to act, which they attributed to a spirit within; when the body died, the spirit that possessed the body took leave of that body. As their consciousness expanded, they later believed that the soul progressed to its happy hunting grounds or heaven. However, the Hebrew progression from polytheism to henotheism to monotheism was not an unbroken chain of events; they experienced retrogression in the evolution of their deity concepts. In any one eon there were many different concepts of God among many groups of Semite, and to avoid confusion, the Higher Beings listed these various deities as they pertained to the evolution of the Jewish theology:

[96:1.3] 1. *Yahweh was the god of the southern Palestinian tribes, who associated this concept of deity with Mount Horeb, the Sinai volcano. Yahweh was merely one of the hundreds and thousands of nature gods which held the attention and claimed the worship of the Semitic tribes and peoples.*

[96:1.4] 2. *El Elyon. For centuries after Melchizedek's sojourn at Salem, his doctrine of deity persisted in various versions but was generally connoted by the term El Elyon, the Most*

High God of heaven. Many Semites, including the immediate descendants of Abraham, at various times worshiped both Yahweh and El Elyon.

[96:1.5] 3. *El Shaddai. It is difficult to explain what El Shaddai stood for. This idea of God was a composite derived from the teachings of Amenemope's Book of Wisdom modified by Akhenaton's doctrine of Aton and further influenced by Melchizedek's teachings embodied in the concept of El Elyon. But as the concept of El Shaddai permeated the Hebrew mind, it became thoroughly colored with the Yahweh beliefs of the desert. One of the dominant ideas of the religion of this era was the Egyptian concept of divine Providence, the teaching that material prosperity was a reward for serving El Shaddai.*

[96:1.6] 4. *El. Amid all this confusion of terminology and haziness of concept, many devout believers sincerely endeavored to worship all of these evolving ideas of divinity, and there grew up the practice of referring to this composite deity as El. And this term included still others of the Bedouin nature gods.*

[96:1.7] 5. *Elohim. In Kish and Ur there long, persisted Sumerian-Chaldean groups who taught a three-in-one God concept founded on the traditions of the days of Adam and Melchizedek. This doctrine was carried to Egypt, where this Trinity was worshiped under the name of Elohim, or in the singular as Eloah. The philosophic circles of Egypt and later Alexandrian teachers of Hebraic extraction taught this unity of pluralistic Gods, and many of Moses' advisers at the time of the exodus believed in this Trinity. But the concept of the trinitarian Elohim never became a real part of Hebrew theology until after they had come under the political influence of the Babylonians.*

[96:1.8] 6. *Sundry names. The Semites disliked to speak the name of their deity, and they therefore resorted to numerous appellations from time to time, such as: The Spirit of God, The Lord, The Angel of the Lord, The Almighty, The Holy One, The Most High, Adonai, The Ancient of Days, The Lord God of Israel, The Creator of Heaven and Earth, Kyrios, Jah, The Lord of Hosts, and The Father in Heaven.*

Jehovah is a name which in recent times has been adopted to identify the entire concept of Yahweh, which evolved into the long Hebrew experience. But the name Jehovah did not come into use until 1,500 years after the life of Jesus.

Until 2,000 years ago, Mount Sinai was somewhat of an active volcano, and it had occasional eruptions even as late as the Israelite journey through that region many years ago. The fire and smoke together with thunderous explosions that caused the eruptions of this volcanic mountain impressed and awed the Bedouins who were occupying the surrounding area, and they greatly feared Yahweh. This spirit of Mount Horeb later became the god of the Hebrew Semites, and they believed him to be supreme over all other gods.

Several other cultures recognized Yahweh; the Canaanites long revered Yahweh; the Kenites loosely believed in Yahweh and the Syrians, but none stayed with Yahweh as long as the Hebrews. The concept of Yahweh had gone through the most development of all the mortal ideas of God. Its progressive revolution can only be matched to that of the Buddha concept in Asia, which led to the concept of the Universal Absolute as the idea of Yahweh finally led to the Universal Father. And it must be stated here as a historical fact that the Jews changed their view of deity from the tribal god of Mount Horeb to the loving and merciful Creator of later times. They did not change His name; they continued to call this evolving concept of deity Yahweh.

The Semites in the eastern part of Palestine were well organized and well-trained leaders who invaded the eastern area of the Fertile Crescent; there, they united with the Babylonians. The Chaldeans near Ur were one of the most advanced of the Eastern Semites. The Phoenicians were a well-mixed race of Semites, a well-organized and somewhat superior group who ruled the western Mediterranean Coast. As far as race goes, the Semites were the

most mixed race of all earth's people, with hereditary genes from almost all nine of the planetary races. This is where the Nodites disappeared in the Middle East as they were swallowed up by many different races.

The Arabians fought their way over and over into the northern Promised Land that "flowed with milk and honey." Time and again they were repelled by the better organized and more highly civilized northern Semites and Hittites. Later, when there was an unusually harsh famine, these roving groups of Bedouins entered Egypt in large numbers as contract laborers on the Egyptian public works. Not long after, they found themselves undergoing the hideous experience of enslavement, the hard daily toil of the common oppressed subjugated laborers of the Valley of the Nile.

After the days of Machiventa Melchizedek and Abraham, certain tribes of Semites were called the Children of Israel and later the Hebrew Jews called themselves "The Chosen People." Abraham was not the racial father of all the Hebrews, nor was he the progenitor of all Bedouin Semites who were held captive in Egypt. It is true that Abraham's offspring coming out of Egypt formed the nucleus of the Jewish people, but the majority of the men and women who incorporated into the ranks of the Israelites were neither slaves nor came out of Egypt. They were a group of nomads who chose to follow the leadership of Moses.

The Melchizedek teachings about El Elyon the Most High and the covenant of divine favor through faith was all but forgotten by the Semites enslaved in Egypt, who later formed the Hebrew nation. It's written in The Urantia Book, at one time more than 100 different Arabian tribes worshiped Yahweh. And now, except for a slight trace of the concept of Melchizedek El Elyon, which continued among the more educated classes of Egypt, including the mixed Hebrews and Egyptian stock, the religion of the rank and file of the Hebrew slaves was a modified form of the old Yahweh ritual of magic and sacrifice.

The Matchless Moses

The start of the evolution of the Hebrew concept of a Supreme Creator dates to the time the Semites obtained their freedom from the fetters of Egypt under that excellent leader, teacher, and organizer, Moses. Moses' mother was a member of the Egyptian royal family; his father was a Semitic liaison officer between the government and the Bedouin captives. Moses possessed character and quality that came from excellent racial sources; his ancestors were so blended it was impossible to classify him in any racial group. The Higher Beings believe that if Moses had not been of this type, he would never have shown that incredible versatility and adaptability which enabled him to control that diversified group who eventually became associated with those Bedouin Semites who fled from Egypt to the Arabian Desert under Moses' leadership.

Despite the royal enticements Egypt offered him, Moses decided to cast his lot with his father's people. At the time the great organizer was making plans to free his father's people, the Bedouin captives hardly had a religion. They were without a valid concept of God and utterly without hope.

No leader had ever undertaken to uplift a sadder, more, dejected, ignorant group of human beings as Moses took upon himself, although these slaves did carry in their gene's latent possibilities of development. Moses wisely educated many leaders in preparation for the day of the revolt. These somewhat intelligent men were employed as native overseers of their people. They received some education due to Moses' influence with the Egyptian rulers.

Moses tried to negotiate diplomatically for the release of his father's people. Moses and his brother had convinced the Egyptian Pharaoh to grant the enslaved people permission to leave peacefully the Valley of the Nile for the Arabian Desert. They were to receive a

modest payment of money and goods in appreciation for their long service in Egypt. Moses and the slaves agreed with the Pharaoh not to join any alliance against Egypt.

The king later repudiated their freedom, giving as his excuse that his spies had discovered disloyalty among the Bedouin slaves. He claimed they wanted their freedom to go into the desert and organize the Nomads against Egypt for revenge. Moses was dauntless; he bided his time, and in less than one year, the Egyptian military force was busy resisting simultaneous violent attacks, Libyan troops advancing from the south, and the Greek navy invading from the north. Moses seized this opportunity to lead his father's people out of Egypt in a spectacular night flight. This escape was carefully planned and skillfully carried out. They were pursued by the Pharaoh and a small band of Egyptians, but all fell before the fugitives' defenses, which yielded much booty.

The Proclamation of Yahweh

[96:4.1] *The evolution and elevation of the Mosaic teaching has influenced almost one-half of all the world's people, and still does even in the twentieth century. While Moses comprehended the more advanced Egyptian religious philosophy, the Bedouin slaves knew little about such teachings, but they had never entirely forgotten the god of Mount Horeb, whom their ancestors called Yahweh.*

[96:4.2] *Moses had heard of the teachings of Machiventa Melchizedek from his father and his mother, their commonness of religious belief being the explanation for the unusual union between a woman of royal blood and a man from a captive race. Moses' father-in-law was a Kenite worshiper of El Elyon, but the emancipator's parents were believers in El Shaddai. Moses thus was educated an El Shaddaist; through the influence of his father-in-law, he became an El Elyonist; and by the time of the Hebrew encampment about Mount Sinai after the flight from Egypt, he had formulated a new and enlarged concept of deity (derived from all his former beliefs), which he wisely decided to proclaim to his people as an expanded concept of their olden tribal god, Yahweh.*

[96:4.3] *Moses had endeavored to teach these Bedouins the ideas of El Elyon, but before leaving Egypt, he became convinced that they would never fully comprehend this doctrine. Therefore, he deliberately determined upon the compromise adoption of their tribal god of the desert as the one and only god of his followers. Moses did not specifically teach that other peoples and nations might not have other gods, but he did resolutely maintain that Yahweh was over and above all, especially to the Hebrews. But always was he plagued by the awkward predicament of trying to present his new and higher idea of deity to these ignorant slaves under the guise of the ancient term Yahweh, which had always symbolized the golden calf of the Bedouin tribes.*

[96:4.4] *The fact that Yahweh was the god of the fleeing Hebrews explains why they tarried so long before the holy mountain of Sinai, and why they there received the ten commandments, which Moses promulgated in the name of Yahweh, the god of Horeb. During this lengthy sojourn before Sinai, the religious ceremonies of the new evolving Hebrew worship were further perfected.*

[96:4.5] *It does not appear that Moses would ever have succeeded in the establishment of his somewhat advanced ceremonial worship and in keeping his followers intact for a quarter of a century had it not been for the violent eruption of Horeb during the third week of their worshipful sojourn at its base. "The mountain of Yahweh was consumed in fire, and the smoke ascended like the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mountain quaked greatly." In view of the cataclysm, it is not surprising that Moses could impress upon his brethren that their God was "mighty, terrible, a devouring fire, fearful and all-powerful."*

[96:4.6] *Moses proclaimed that Yahweh was the Lord God of Israel, who had singled out the Hebrews as his chosen people; he was building a new nation, and he wisely nationalized his religious teachings, telling his followers that Yahweh was a hard taskmaster, a “jealous God.” But nonetheless he sought to enlarge their concept of divinity when he taught them Yahweh was the “God of the spirits of all flesh” and when he said, “The eternal God is your refuge and underneath are the everlasting arms.” Moses taught that Yahweh was a covenant-keeping God: that he “will not forsake you, neither destroy you, nor forget the covenant of your fathers because the Lord loves you and will not forget the oath by which he swore to your fathers.”*

[96:4.7] *Moses made a heroic effort to uplift Yahweh to the dignity of the supreme deity when he presented him as the “God of truth and without iniquity, just and right in all his ways.” And yet, despite this exalted teaching, the limited understanding of his followers made it necessary to speak of God as being in man’s image, as being subject to fits of anger, wrath, and severity, even that he was vengeful and easily influenced by man’s conduct.*

[96:4.8] *Under the teachings of Moses this tribal nature god, Yahweh, became the Lord God of Israel, who followed them through the wilderness and even into exile, where he presently was conceived as the God of all people. The later captivity that enslaved the Jews in Babylon finally liberated the evolving concept of Yahweh to assume the monotheistic role of the God of all nations.*

[96:4.9] *The most unique and amazing feature of the religious history of the Hebrews concerns this continuous evolution of the concept of deity from the primitive god of Mount Horeb up through the teachings of their successive spiritual leaders to the high level of development depicted in the deity doctrines of the Isaiah, who proclaimed that magnificent concept of the loving and merciful Creator Father.*

Teachings of Moses

Moses was the most important individual world teacher between the time of Melchizedek and Jesus. He tried to introduce many reforms to his people, the Israelites, but there are no records. In the short span of one man’s life, he led the confused multitudes of so-called Hebrews out of slavery, and as they roamed he laid the foundation for the birth of a nation and perpetuated a race. There is very little on record about this great man because the Hebrews had no written language at the time of the exodus from Egypt.

The record of the times and acts of Moses came from traditions and word-of-mouth. The Hebrews had no written language for a thousand years after the death of the great leader. One can only imagine the different stories that were told over a period of 1,000 years. Surely the tale of the parting of the Red Sea was one such imaginative story.

Moses made many religious advances beyond the Egyptians and surrounding Levantine tribes; his improvements were due to the Kenite tradition of the teachings of Melchizedek. Without the teachings of the Melchizedek and Abraham, the Hebrews would have come out of Egypt in hopeless darkness. Moses, along with his father-in-law, Jethro, gleaned the residue of the tradition of the days of Melchizedek. Those teachings combined with the instructions of the Egyptians guided Moses in his creation of an improved religion and ritual for the Israelites.

Moses was a good organizer and leader. He selected the best of the beliefs and mores of Egypt and Palestine, and by blending these practices with the Melchizedek teachings, he was able to put together a system of formal worship for the Hebrews.

Moses believed in the benevolent guidance of God; he became thoroughly familiar with the doctrine of supernatural control of the Nile and other events. He had a grand vision of God; and he was sincere when he taught the Hebrews that if they obeyed God, He would love

them, bless them and multiply them. God would increase the fruits of their womb, and the fruits of the land, such as grain, wine, oils and their flocks. Moses taught them that they would prosper above all people, and the Lord God would take away from them all sickness, and they would experience none of the evil diseases of Egypt. The Higher Beings said it was truly pitiful to watch this great mind trying to simplify his sublime concept of El Elyon, the Most High, to a level the ignorant and illiterate Hebrews could comprehend. Because Moses feared to talk to them about the mercy of God, he spoke to them in this manner: [96:5.6] *"The Lord your God is God of all Gods, and Lord of Lords, a mighty and terrible God, who regards not man."* And he tried to control the turbulent groups of people by declaring, *"Your God kills when you disobey him; he heals and give life when you obey Him."* Moses taught these tribes that they would become God chosen only on the condition that they *"kept all his commandments and obeyed all his statutes."*

But Moses couldn't teach those illiterate Hebrews about the kind and merciful Father in heaven that Jesus proclaimed; they would have run him out of town because they were used to a god who was hard to please. There was even a time when they would sacrifice their firstborn sons to please this god.

Although Moses tried to present a universal and beneficent deity to the children of Israel, overall, their concept of God was not much better than the tribal gods of the surrounding people. The Hebrew concept of God was primitive and crude; when Moses passed on, those Bedouins tribes reverted to the old semi-barbaric ideas of their gods of Mount Horeb and the desert. The grander vision of God which Moses did teach to his leaders was soon lost and most of the people returned to the worship of their fetish golden calves, the Palestine herdsmen's symbol of Yahweh. After Moses' death, the lofty concept of Yahweh deteriorated rapidly. Joshua, who took over the leadership of Israel, continued to teach the Mosaic tradition of an all-wise beneficent and almighty God, but the people returned to the old desert concepts of Yahweh. This backward drift of the ideas of deity continued to increase throughout the successive rule of the various so-called Judges.

The astounding personality of Moses helped to keep alive the inspiration of an enlarged concept of God in the hearts of his followers; after they reached the fertile land of Palestine, and they changed from nomadic herders into more settled farmers. This evolution of their economy and environment changed their everyday habits and affected how they perceived their Yahweh. During these days, the Hebrews lost almost all memory of Moses' teachings. They almost forgot all concepts of monotheism, and nearly lost their opportunity of becoming the people who would serve as an important link in the spiritual evolution of the earth, the group who preserved the Melchizedek teachings of one God, until the time came for the incarnation on earth of a Bestowal Son of the Father of all.

Joshua tried desperately to hold the concept of a supreme Yahweh in the mind of his people by proclaiming, "As I was with Moses so will I be with you; I will not fail you nor forsake you." [96:6.3] He thought it necessary to preach a strict gospel to his non-believing people, who were too willing to go back to their old beliefs and unwilling to go forward in the religion of faith and righteousness. The burden of Joshua's teachings became: "Yahweh is a holy God; he is a jealous God; he will not forgive your transgressions or your sin." The highest concept of this age pictured Yahweh as a "God of power, judgment, and justice." [96:6.3]

Under the leadership of sheiks and priests, the Hebrews became somewhat established in Palestine. They returned to their old benighted ways of the desert, infected with the less advanced Canaanites' religious practices. They became sexually unrestrained, and their ideas of God fell far below the Egyptian and Mesopotamian concepts that were kept by specific surviving Salem groups, which are recorded in some of the Psalms and the so-called Book of Job.

The Higher Beings mentioned that the Psalms are the work of scores of authors, including Egyptian and Mesopotamian teachers. During those days when the Levant worshiped nature gods, there were still quite a few people who believed in the supremacy of El Elyon the Most High. But no compilation gives such a beautiful expression of personal love for God, devotion, and inspiration as the Book of Psalms. This book is the record of varying concepts expressed by believers of the Salem religion throughout the Levant and embraces the entire period from Amenemope to Isaiah. (Amenemope was an Egyptian who taught the teachings of Melchizedek, and among other things, that God-consciousness is the primary factor which determines conduct.) In the Book of Psalms, God is depicted in all states and conceptions, from the crude ideas of tribal gods to the vastly expanded ideas of the later Hebrews, where Yahweh is described as a loving ruler and merciful Father.

For many years now, I have lived with the in-depth understanding that David couldn't have written the Book of Psalms because he didn't have the intuitive understanding to express such inner devotion and inspirational feelings as were needed to write the Psalms. Those who wrote the Psalms were imbued with love of God. And David didn't fit that description. If we read the lofty concepts of divinity found in the compilations of Mesopotamian beliefs, we will recognize that it was around Ur of Chaldea that the ideas of a real God were kept alive during the dark days of Palestine.

It was the Melchizedek who helped the Israelites throughout the dark years; whenever Moses spoke about the priest of the Most High who was the Melchizedek, Jewish priests would change the name to Yahweh. Because of people like those Jewish scribes who changed records when they came across something they didn't understand and inserted their interpretation in its place, the records are so distorted today. Therefore I am grateful for The Urantia Book. With the information in this book, I saw how to fit the distorted pieces together.

The truth is, there was no way our ancient ancestors could understand that the Melchizedek was helping Moses from another dimension. In fact, they could not conceive of another dimension; that was not in their vocabulary. The closest they came to another dimension was Egypt's Nether World. Indeed, how many people nowadays understand that there are different dimensions and that we are thriving alongside spiritual beings?

The wisdom and all-pervasiveness of God was often grasped in Palestine, but seldom was God's love and mercy. The Jewish understanding of Yahweh was sending evil spirits to dominate the soul of his enemies, prospering his obedient children, and cursing and pronouncing judgment on all others. Only in Ur, a voice sounded the mercy of God saying: "He shall pray to God and shall find favor with Him and shall see His face with joy, for God shall give to him divine righteousness" [96:7.7]. And so the remnant of the Salem missionaries in Mesopotamia kept the divine light shining during the period of disorganization of the Hebrew people until the appearance of the first teachers of Israel. They continued to establish concept upon concept, finally achieving the realization of the idea of the universal and creator Father of us all, the apex of the evolution of Yahweh concepts. This Divine Light paved the way for Jesus.

Today, with worldwide information available, everyone should realize that men wrote the Bible. Although much of the Bible were inspired, it's not infallible, as some seem to think; and it shows how little we know about history. If you search the Sumerians records of the Epic of Gilgamesh, the world's first great epic, you will learn about the world's first recorded great flood, Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden, and the daughters of men having children by the sons of God. It is obvious the Jews copied this information from the Sumerian cuneiform and Babylonian tablets, when the nation of Judah was captured by the Babylonian

Nebuchadnezzar in 597 B.C. The record states the Jews suffered the Babylonian captivity for 72 years, and that is when they learned about the flood and altered their records.

Chapter 10

Jesus the Christ

The Urantia Book contains 700 pages on the life and teachings of Jesus. Where did these 700 pages of information come from? A commission of 12 Urantia midwayers, acting under the supervision of the Melchizedek revelatory directors, sponsored these papers. A midwayer who at one time was assigned to the superhuman watch care of the Apostle Andrew supplied the necessary information for the papers.

To better understand the teachings of Jesus, let us examine a couple of Jesus' former initiations. As I mentioned before, all Creator Sons must experience seven initiations before they can obtain full sovereignty of the universe, they created with their many helpers. The Melchizedek who commanded the revelatory commission and was assigned by Gabriel, said in the first paper on Jesus, Paper 120, that he was authorized to present events that happened *right before* the Creator Son arrived on earth. He was permitted to offer the following excerpt: Emmanuel charging Michael on his final bestowal or initiation, the seventh:

[120:1.1] *My Creator brother, I am about to witness your seventh and final universe bestowal. Most faithfully and perfectly have you executed the six previous commissions, and I entertain no thought but that you will be equally triumphant on this, your terminal sovereignty bestowal. Heretofore you have appeared on your bestowal spheres as a fully developed being of the order of your choosing. Now you are about to appear upon Urantia, the disordered and disturbed planet of your choice, not as a fully developed mortal, but as a helpless babe. This, my comrade, will be a new and untried experience for you. You are about to pay the full price of bestowal and to experience the complete enlightenment of the incarnation of a Creator in the likeness of a creature.*

[120:1.2] *Throughout each of your former bestowals you have voluntarily chosen to subject yourself to the will of the three Paradise Deities and their divine interassociations. Of the seven phases of the will of the Supreme, you have in your previous bestowals been subject to all but the personal will of your Paradise Father. Now that you have elected to be wholly subjected to your Father's will throughout your seventh bestowal, I, as the personal representative of our Father, assume the unqualified jurisdiction of your universe for the time of your incarnation.*

[120:1.3] *In entering upon the Urantia bestowal, you have voluntarily divested yourself of all extra-planetary support and special assistance such as might be rendered by any creature of your own creation. As your created sons of Nebadon are wholly dependent upon you for safe conduct throughout their universe careers, so now must you become wholly and unreservedly dependent upon your Paradise Father for safe conduct throughout the unrevealed vicissitudes of your ensuing mortal career. And when you shall have finished this bestowal experience, you will know in very truth the full meaning and the rich significance of that faith-trust which you so unvaryingly require all your creatures to master as a part of their intimate relationship with you as their local universe Creator and Father.*

When I was a young man not understanding much about the universe we live in, I often wondered why beings like angels and other Higher Beings came to be in God's heaven.

I was taught there was nothing but happiness in heaven, and we had to suffer pain and sorrow here on earth. Why did the Higher Beings deserve such privileges? At times I found myself burning with envy of Jesus! How did he become God's Favorite Son? Thoughts like these ran through my young mind. But in reading The Urantia Book I learned what these beings had to go through—thousands of years of trials and initiations—to qualify to maintain their status. After studying some of their problems, my envy simply melted away.

We may think the Higher Beings have it easy. We humans are *ascending* sons and daughters of God, and the Higher Beings are *descending* Sons and Daughters of God. Higher Beings start from higher vibrational worlds and go through initiations on worlds of lower vibration in their quest for perfection. Not all succeed in perfecting themselves. We are reminded of Adam and Eve, or Lucifer. When we attain Paradise and evolve into what the Higher Beings call finaliters, we will have reached a state of consciousness far above Lucifer before he fell. That destiny, should we choose to attain Paradise, lies thousands of years ahead. So, you see, we are nothing but babies. Don't let our present existence fool you as we are just seeds sprouting in a soul garden.

Before incarnating into our world as Jesus Christ, Son of God, he was known in higher realms as a Creator Son of God. These many Creator Sons are each responsible for creating a vast universe which is in turn a small part of God the Father's. All these Sons are known as only begotten Sons of God, for each Creator Son is unique.

Previous Bestowals of Christ Michael

The beings responsible for seeing that we obtained this information on Urantia wrote: These papers were authorized by a Nebadon commission of twelve acting under the direction of Mantutia Melchizedek.

[119:0.1] *Chief of the evening stars of Nebadon [our local universe] I am assigned to Urantia by Gabriel on the mission of revealing the story of the seven bestowals of the Universe Sovereign Michael of Nebadon, and my name is Gavalia. In making this presentation, I will adhere strictly to the limitations imposed by my commission.*

[119:1.1] *It was a solemn occasion on Salvington almost one billion years ago when the assembled directors and chiefs of the universe of Nebadon heard Michael announce that his elder brother, Immanuel, would presently assume authority in Nebadon while he (Michael) would be absent on an unexplained mission. No other announcement was made about this transaction except that the farewell broadcast to the Constellation Fathers, among other instructions, said: "And for this period I place you under the care and keeping of Immanuel while I go to do the bidding of my Paradise Father."*

After saying his farewells, Michael, the one we knew later as Jesus Christ, vanished and did not reappear for 20 years of Salvington time, but 100 years of Urantia time.

[119:1.2] *In all Salvington, only the Divine Minister and Immanuel knew what was taking place, and the Union of Days shared his secret only with the chief executive of the universe, Gabriel, the Bright and Morning Star.*

All the beings on Salvington and the inhabitants of the constellation and system headquarters worlds gathered around their receiving stations for universe intelligence hoping for word of the whereabouts of the universe Creator Son. Not until three days after Michael's disappearance was a message of any significance received. On this day, a message of an extraordinary and never-before-heard-of transaction was received on Salvington from the Melchizedek sphere, headquarters sphere of that order in Nebadon: On this day at noon, there appeared a strange Melchizedek Son on the receiving field of this world. [A receiving field is something like our airports.] He was not of our order, but something like ours. A solitary omniaphim [higher angel] was with him who had credentials from Uversa

[headquarters world of the seventh Superuniverse] and presented orders addressed to our chief of staff from the Ancients of Days, in agreement with Emmanuel of Salvington, ordering that this new Melchizedek be received by our order and assigned to the emergency service of the Melchizedeks of Nebadon; and as requested, done.

This is all the record of Salvington concerning the first of Michael's bestowals. After 20 years Salvington time, 100 years earth time, Michael returned unannounced to resume his regular universe affairs. The record does mention the service of this unique Melchizedek to the emergency corps.

We see that time is not the same in all parts of the universe as Einstein's law of relativity demonstrated. On the world of the Higher Beings, only 20 years had passed while Michael was away, and on earth, 100 years elapsed. I quote this section so you, the reader, may better understand.

[119:1.5] *And at noon on this day, without previous announcement and witnessed by only three of our brotherhood, this visiting Son of our order disappeared from our world just as he came, accompanied only by a solitary omniaphim; and this record is now closed with the certification that this visitor lived as a Melchizedek, in the likeness of a Melchizedek he worked as a Melchizedek, and he faithfully performed all of his assignments as an emergency Son of our order. By universal consent he has become chief of Melchizedeks, having earned our love and adoration by his matchless wisdom, supreme love, and superb devotion to duty. He loved us, understood us, and forever we are his loyal and devoted fellow Melchizedeks, for this stranger on our world has now eternally become a universe minister of the Melchizedeks.*

[119:1.6] *And that is all I am permitted to tell you of the first bestowal of Michael. We, of course, fully understand that this strange Melchizedek who so mysteriously served with the Melchizedeks a billion years ago was none other than the incarnate Michael on the mission of his first bestowal. The records do not specifically state that this unique and efficient Melchizedek was Michael, but it is universally believed that he was. Probably the actual statement of that fact cannot be found outside of the records of Sonarington [Sonarington is headquarters of the accredited and approved ascending and descending Sons of God] and the records of that secret world are not open to us. Only on this sacred world of the divine Sons are the mysteries of incarnation and bestowal fully known. We all know of the fact of the Michael bestowals, but we do not understand how they are effected. We do not know how the ruler of a universe, the creator of the Melchizedeks, can so suddenly and mysteriously become one of their numbers and, as one of them, live among them and work as a Melchizedek for one hundred years. But it happened.*

From all indications, Creator Sons can take on different forms, as when Michael the Son of God became Jesus Christ. Michael's appearance on the Melchizedek headquarters planet as a Melchizedek was the first of his seven bestowals. After his last bestowal on our planet as Christ, he became known as Christ Michael. Reading about the seven initiations of Christ, I was fascinated, as these tales brought back memories of stories about the mythological initiations of Greek god/heroes such as Hercules and Zeus. I believe that stories like Hercules were retold and originated from Sumerian cuneiforms long before the time of the Greek and Roman Empires. The mythological initiations of the Greeks and Romans are vestiges of the initiation of Sons of God traces of initiation stories left behind by members of the Garden of Eden, and the days of Abraham and the Melchizedek. The initiations the Creator Sons of God must experience help them better to understand their creation from the lowest creatures to the highest.

The Romans and Greeks didn't understand the true meaning of the stories of initiation of the Sons of God passed down to them from ancient Sumerians. They, no doubt, took these stories to be a fantasy of the ancient Sumerians, started to create their mythological fairy

tales, and the true meaning of these stories was lost to humanity. Even the later Sumerians didn't have a full understanding, an example was Gilgamesh. Now we can revive these stories, give them their true meaning and, in return, these stories will provide more meaning to our spiritual life, which humanity so desperately needs.

Sacrificial Lamb

As we study and analyze Jesus' life as he lived it on earth and as reported in the Urantia Book, we realize some things don't add up as they were reported to us through the years. First, Jesus was a knowledgeable person, especially for his age; he had the knowledge, demeanor, and wisdom of a much older man. And he knew he didn't have to die at that early age. We were taught that he died for our sins. As I grew older, that statement became a great contradiction because I was also taught the Ten Commandments, and one of the Ten Commandments plainly states, "*Thou Shall Not Kill.*" Why would God require his Son to sacrifice his life to forgive us for our sins? Wouldn't that make all other sacrifices legitimate, even the sacrifice of first-born sons long ago practiced by the ancient Israelites?

We need to ask ourselves: why would an all-powerful Superior Being require humans to kill his Son to forgive us for our sins, especially after God demanded we shouldn't kill. I tried to understand the real reason Jesus allowed himself to put to death, and it stood out like a sore thumb. How often did he tell his disciples that his temple would be destroyed and in three days he would rise again (John 2:19)? That is why he was determined to be put to death, so he could demonstrate to us humans that if we follow in his footsteps, in three days after our death, we too will rise in another dimension. Otherwise, we would have to wait until the resurrection where our fate would be decided. The Churches do not emphasize this. They talk about a Sacrificial Lamb which Jesus never mentioned during his entire ministry; and if true, would have been one of the most critical statements in the *Bible*. Why didn't Jesus ever suggest that he was the Sacrificial Lamb? Was he too modest? I don't think so. Jesus taught us what we must do for our Heavenly Father to forgive us our sins and that is to have faith and do his will, and our wrongdoings will be forgiven. The Urantia Book says the most excellent prayer one can offer to God is to do his will.

Jesus died to prove to us that we will be resurrected in new bodies. That's why Mary Magdalene did not recognize Jesus that Sunday morning at his burial site. He had a new body, and Jesus had to tell her who he was. The Urantia Book states that over 1,000 people saw Jesus in his resurrected body.

Just as caterpillars receive new bodies when they become butterflies, so will we receive new, more spiritual bodies and we'll dwell in a higher dimension. After we receive our new bodies, we will proceed to the even higher dimensions where Jesus dwells. That is the reason he was unconcerned with his status in this world; his disciples couldn't understand he was already ruler of a universe. He often told them his kingdom was not of this world (John 18:36).

Jesus said he would prepare a place for us. Is it so difficult for us to comprehend that he was talking about other worlds? He plainly stated he was not of this world: his kingdom was not of this world. It was apparent he was trying to teach his disciples there are other worlds, other dimensions. There are quite a few scientists who are working on mathematical theories of different dimensions, and many have proved mathematically the existence of other dimensions. But many people don't believe the scientists when it comes to other dimensions. Humanity only believes scientists regarding things they can see and touch—things that have made their lives more pleasant, like computers and other advanced technologies. When it comes to other dimensions, they claim the scientists don't know what they are talking about—it's not in the *Bible*. The computer was not in the *Bible*, but it is here. According to The

Urantia Book, there are many other worlds inhabited by other beings. These are the worlds I believe Jesus spoke of when he said in John 14:2, "In my Father's house, there are many mansions."

During Jesus time on earth, there were several patriotic Jewish groups. One of these groups, known as the Zealots, tried to persuade Jesus to lead them into a rebellion against the yoke of the Roman empire, but Jesus refused. Several political groups tried to solicit Jesus to join them, but their efforts were in vain. The idea of battle and slaughter was repulsive to Jesus; he would have none of it. He appeared on earth as the Prince of Peace, to reveal a loving God to his creation. According to The Urantia Book, just before his baptism by John the Baptist, the Zealots tried again to persuade Jesus to lead them into battle against the Roman oppressors. Jesus had a difficult time trying to convince his disciples that he was not here to sit on the throne of David and that his kingdom was not of this world.

John the Baptist

According to The Urantia Book, John the Baptist was born March 25, B.C. 7, as Gabriel had promised Elizabeth in June of the year before. For five months, Elizabeth kept Gabriel's visit a secret. Elizabeth's husband Zacharias was leery of the story when Elizabeth did tell him about it, and he didn't fully believe it until he had a strange dream, just as Jesus' father had. Except for the visit of Gabriel, there was nothing unreal or supernatural connected to the birth of John the Baptist. Both John and Jesus had human fathers. I suppose if Elizabeth and Zacharias had not been married for such a long time, the Roman Catholic Church would have said that John was born of a virgin, and that his birth was supernatural. When Gabriel announced the birth, he didn't say anything about one being born differently from the other. So, where did the Romans get their fantastic story of a virgin birth? If the story was from the Old Testament, why didn't Gabriel announce that? It would have been extremely important had it been true, but Gabriel just said two sons would be born.

The most eventful thing that happened in John's early life was when his parents took him to see Jesus and his family. This visit took place in the month of June, B.C. 1, when John was a little over six years old. When he returned home his parents began to educate him; there was no synagogue school in their little village. Zacharias, being a priest, was well educated and Elizabeth was better educated than the average Judean woman; since John was their only child, they spent a great amount of time on his spiritual and mental training. (Otherwise, he grew up as an ordinary child in a small city known in those days as the city of Judah, about four miles from Jerusalem.)

John Becomes a Nazarite

John had no school from which to graduate at age 14, so his parents decided this was the appropriate time for him to take the formal Nazarite vow. Zacharias and Elizabeth took their son to Engedi down by the Dead Sea. Here was the southern headquarters of the Nazarite Brotherhood, and here John was inducted into this order for life. In the Nazarite order, one had to abstain from all intoxicating drinks, let one's hair grow long, and refrain from touching the dead. After John had made his vow, the family went to Jerusalem where before the temple John made the offering required of those taking the Nazarite vow.

John made the same vow taken by his famous predecessors Samson and the prophet Samuel. A Nazarite was considered a sanctified and holy person. The Jews looked upon the Nazarites with almost the same respect and honor that is given to a high priest; for them, it was not strange for the Nazarites of lifelong consecration to be the only persons except the high priests who were permitted to enter the holy of holies in the temples.

When John was 16, years old, as a result of reading about Elijah, he became very impressed with the prophet of Mount Carmel and decided to adopt his style of dress. From that day on, John always wore a hairy garment with a leather girdle. At 16, John was more than six feet tall and almost full grown. With his flowing hair and strange mode of dress, he was certainly an odd-looking youth. His parents expected great things of their only son, a child of promise and a Nazarite for life.

At the beginning of the month of March, A.D. 25, John traveled around the western coast of the Dead Sea and up the river Jordan opposite of Jericho, the ancient ford over which Joshua and the children of Israel had passed when they first entered the Promised Land. He crossed over to the other side of the river, prepared himself near the entrance of the ford and began to preach to the people on their way to and fro across the river, as this is where most people crossed.

It was recognized by all who heard John that he was more than just a preacher. Most people who listened to this weird man who came up from the Judean wilderness went away believing they had heard the voice of a prophet. Tens of thousands of listeners came to hear him, some merely curious, but many earnest and serious who came from all parts of Judea, Perea and Samaria. The souls of these weary and expectant Jews were greatly stirred by this phenomenon. Not in all their history had the devout children of Abraham longed more for the Consolation of Israel or more ardently looked for the restoration of the kingdom. Not in all Jewish history could John's message, the kingdom of Heaven is at hand, have more of a universal appeal at the very time he mysteriously appeared on the bank of the crossing of the Jordan. *He was dressed like Elijah of old, and he thundered his admonition and poured forth his warning in the spirit and power of Elijah.*" [135:6.3]

By December, A.D. 25, John's fame extended throughout all of Palestine and his work was the conversation of the entire town about the lake of Galilee. Jesus, speaking favorably of John's message, caused many from Capernaum to join John's cult of repentance and baptism. James and John, the sons of Zebedee, had gone in December to see John. After that, they went down once a week and brought first-hand reports of the evangelist's work back to Jesus.

Two of Jesus' brothers, James and Jude, had talked about going down to John to be baptized. Jude had come over to Capernaum for the Sabbath service; he and James, after listening to Jesus' discourse in the synagogue, decided to talk to Jesus about their plans for baptism by John. This was on a Saturday, January 12, A.D. 26. Jesus asked them if they would postpone the discussion until the following day and he would give them his answer.

Jesus slept very little that night; he was in close intercourse with his Father in heaven. He arranged to have lunch with his brothers at noon the next day, and then he would advise them concerning their desire to be baptized by John. That Sunday, Jesus was working as usual in the boat shop. James and Jude had arrived with his lunch and were waiting in the lumber room for him. It was not yet time for the midday break, and they knew that their brother Jesus was very prompt about such matters.

A little before the noon rest, Jesus laid down his tools, removed his work apron, and said to the three workmen in the room with him, "My hour has come." He went out to the lumber room where his brothers were waiting, and repeated, "My hour has come—let us go to John." [135:8.3] And they started right away to Pella where John was preaching and baptizing, eating their lunch on the way. This was Sunday, January 13. They stayed the night in the Jordan Valley and arrived where John was baptizing around noon of the next day.

The Baptism of Jesus

John had just started baptizing the aspirants for the day. Many repentants were standing in line waiting their turn to be baptized when Jesus and his brothers got in line with these earnest men and women who had become believers in John's teachings concerning the coming kingdom.

John had asked about Jesus' several times when he talked to Zebedee's sons. He had heard of Jesus' remarks about his preaching and day by day he was hoping to see him arrive on the scene, but he did not expect to greet him in line with the baptismal candidates. In fact, John was so engrossed with the details of baptizing many converts that he didn't see Jesus, the "Son of Man," until he was in his immediate presence. After recognizing Jesus, the ceremony was halted for a moment as John greeted his cousin, and asked, *but why did you come down into the water to greet me?* And Jesus answered, *to be subject to your baptism.* John answered: *But I have need to be baptized by you. Why do you come to me?"*

And Jesus whispered to John: "Bear with me now, for it becomes us to set an example for my brothers standing here with me, and that the people would know that my hour has come. [135:8.5]

Jesus spoke to John with a voice of authority. John was trembling with emotion as he prepared Jesus of Nazareth in the Jordan River at noon on Monday, January 14, A.D. 26. And so, John baptized Jesus and his two brothers, James and Jude. And when John baptized these three, he dismissed the crowd for the day, telling them he would resume baptism the next day at noon. As the people went on their way, the four men still standing in the water, heard a strange sound and there appeared for a moment an apparition over the head of Jesus and they heard a voice saying, "This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased." A tremendous change came over the face of Jesus; he got out of the water in silence and took his leave of them, going toward the hills to the east. And no man saw Jesus again for forty days.

When Jesus walked away, John followed him for a distance to tell him of the story of Gabriel's visit to his mother before either of them was born. John said he had heard the story so many times from his mother's lips. He let Jesus continue on his way after he said; "Now I know of a certainty that you are the Deliverer." But Jesus said nothing.

During the time of those 40 days of waiting, many rumors spread throughout the countryside all the way to Tiberias and Jerusalem. Thousands went over to see the new attraction in John's camp. They talked about the Messiah, but Jesus was nowhere to be seen. When John's disciples claimed that the strange man of God took to the hills, many doubted the whole story.

Around three weeks after Jesus went to the hills, there appeared on the scene at Pella deputies from the priests and Pharisees at Jerusalem. They asked John on the spot if he was Elijah or the Prophet that Moses had promised, and John said, *I am not.* Then they asked, *Are you the Messiah?*

John answered, *I am not.* Then asked the priests from Jerusalem, "If you are not the prophet, nor the Messiah, then who gave you the right to baptize people and create such a stir?"

John said, *"It is up to those people that have heard me and received my baptism to announce who I am."* Then he said, *Although I baptize with water, there has been among us one who will return and baptize you with the Holy Spirit, [135:9.4].*

These were arduous days in John's experience; he had prayed for Jesus' return. Some of John's disciples organized groups to go in search of Jesus, but John forbade them, saying: *"Our times are in the hands of the God of heaven; he will direct his chosen Son."*

The Forty Days

Jesus had overcome the Great Temptation of his mortal initiation before his baptism when he was on Mount Hermon for six weeks. He had gone into 40 days of rest to formulate the plans for proclaiming the new Kingdom of God in the hearts of man. Jesus did not go into the hills for the purpose of fasting and the affliction of his soul. He was not an ascetic, and he came to eradicate all such beliefs regarding the human search for God.

Jesus was then fully self-conscious concerning his relation to the universe of his making and his many helpers; he was also aware of the universe of universes controlled by God the Father in heaven. He now recalls the instruction given to him by his older brother Immanuel before he entered upon his earth incarnation. He clearly understood all relationships, and he wanted to be away for a while and meditate—to think out his plans for public service.

While Jesus was wandering about the hills looking for suitable shelter, he encountered his universe chief of staff, Gabriel, the Bright and Morning Star of Nebadon (our local universe). Gabriel re-established personal communication with the Creator Son of our universe, now Jesus of Nazareth; they met directly for the first time since Michael (Jesus) left Gabriel in the higher worlds in preparation for his final initiation on earth. Gabriel informed Jesus that his experience on earth was practically over, as far as concerned his earning the title of sovereignty ruler of our universe and terminating the Lucifer rebellion. "And Jesus came and spake unto them saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and on earth." Matthew 28:18.

Another Higher Being joined Jesus and Gabriel in their conference. He told Jesus he was now at liberty to terminate his incarnation, to ascend to the right hand of the Father to receive sovereignty rights and take over his well-earned unconditional rulership of all Nebadon. Meanwhile, through all the 40 days Jesus was away, James and John Zebedee were searching for him. Several times they were not far from the place he had chosen as his shelter, but they never found him.

Jesus wasn't ready to return to the higher worlds, even though he was granted permission to do so. He couldn't leave his sons and daughters on earth without demonstrating to them the reason for being. He came that we might live life more fully. Part of his demonstration was to die and after three days rise again. How often did he tell the Pharisees, if you destroy this temple (his body), in three days I'll raise it up again? (John 2:19) By dying and raising his body in three days, he was demonstrating to us that life is a continuum. After our transition, we will continue to evolve.

Jesus also said in my Father's house are many mansions, and I go to prepare a place for you (John 14:2). He said his kingdom is not of this world (John 18:36). Wasn't he telling us there are other worlds? Jesus was free to return to the worlds from whence he came and have complete dominion over his universe. But he loved mankind so much he was willing to die to show us that life is a continuum; he was willing to endure suffering to prove it to us. Today's physicists are on the verge of proving there are other dimensions teeming with life.

On the Sabbath February 23, A.D. 26, at morning breakfast, the group that was with John looked up toward the north and saw Jesus coming towards them. As he approached, John stood upon a large rock and lifting his voice, said: "Behold the Son of God, the deliverer of the world. This is the one of whom I spoke; after me, there will come one who is preferred because he was before me; for this reason, I came out of the wilderness to preach repentance

and to be baptized with water announcing the kingdom of heaven is at hand. Now the one is here who will baptize you with the Holy Spirit. And I saw the Divine Spirit descending upon this man, and I heard the voice of God declare, "This is my beloved Son in whom I am well pleased." (The Bible).

Jesus asked them to return to their meal, while he sat down to eat with John for his brothers had returned to Capernaum.

All that Sabbath day, February 23, Jesus mingled with the people who surrounded John's camp. He ministered to a small boy who injured himself in a fall, and he took the child home to the nearby village of Pella to make sure the boy arrived safely to his parents. During that Sabbath, two of John's most important disciples, Andrew and his brother Simon, spent a lot of time with Jesus; Andrew went with Jesus to make sure the boy got safely home.

Andrew was profoundly impressed with Jesus' teachings; on the way back to John's camp he asked Jesus many questions. Andrew said to Jesus, *I have watched you ever since you came to Capernaum and I believe you are the new teacher; although I do not understand all your teachings, I have made up my mind to follow you. I will sit at your feet and learn the whole truth about your new kingdom of God.* [137:1.1] Andrew was the first of Jesus' twelve apostles who would work with Jesus in the establishment of the new Kingdom of God in the hearts of men.

Jesus had returned to Pella for the night; Andrew and Simon were discussing the nature of their involvement in the establishment of the coming kingdom when James and John the sons of Zebedee arrived. They were just returning from the hills in search of Jesus; when they approached John the Baptist's camp, they overheard Simon Peter and his brother Andrew talking about their acceptance as Jesus' apostles and that they were leaving for Galilee the next morning. James and John were sad; they had known Jesus for some time and had lived with him. They searched for him in the hills many days, only to return to learn others had been selected before them as his apostles. They asked where Jesus and they made haste to find him.

Jesus was asleep when they located him; they awakened him asking, "How is it that we who have so long lived with you and while we search the hills for you, you choose Andrew and Simon before us as your apostles in the new kingdom? Jesus told them, *"Be calm in your hearts and ask yourselves, who directed that you should search for the Son of Man when he was about his Father's business?"* [137:1.6] Jesus told them to learn to search for the secret of the kingdom in their hearts and not in the hills. John was bold enough to ask, "Master, will James and I be associates of yours in the new kingdom as Andrew and Simon?" Jesus' answer was so touching, I will quote it:

And Jesus, laying a hand on the shoulder of each of them, said: *My brethren, you were already with me in the spirit of the kingdom, even before these others made request to be received. You, my brethren, have no need to make request for entrance into the kingdom; you have been with me in the kingdom from the beginning. Before men, others may take precedence over you, but in my heart, did I also number you in the councils of the kingdom, even before you thought to make this request of me. And even so might you have been first before men had you not been absent engaged in a well-intentioned, but self-appointed task of seeking for one who was not lost. In the coming kingdom, be not mindful of those things which foster your anxiety, but rather at all times concern yourselves only with doing the will of the Father who is in heaven.* [137:1.6].

Early that next morning, Jesus left John and his disciples returned to Galilee; Jesus never said when he would see John again. John asked about his own preaching and mission. Jesus only said, *My Father will guide you now and in the future as he has in the past.* And

those great men separated that morning on the banks of the Jordan River, never again to see each other in the flesh.

After Jesus had left John's camp on his way to Galilee, he asked the four whom he had already chosen as apostles to help select the other eight, and they did so until there were twelve apostles. Not long after that, John the Baptist was imprisoned and killed by Herod Antipas.

The Hearts of the People

Jesus knew what was on the minds of the people of his time. He knew what was in their hearts, and if his teachings had been passed on as he presented them, all nations and races of the world would readily accept the gospel of the kingdom. His teaching was simple: the fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man.

Paul, in his efforts to bring the teachings of Jesus to the attention of specific groups, wrote many letters of instruction and warnings. Other teachers of the gospel did likewise, but none of them realized that some of those letters would be claimed as the teachings of Jesus. While Christianity does contain more of Jesus' teachings than any other religion, it also includes a great deal the Master did not teach. The early Christians incorporated into the teachings of the early Christian Church much of the Persian mysteries, and the Greek philosophy. The Urantia Book claims two great mistakes were made in presenting Jesus' teachings, and I quote:

[149:2.3] *The effort to connect the gospel teaching directly onto the Jewish theology, as illustrated by the Christian doctrines of the atonement—the teaching that Jesus was the sacrificed Son who would satisfy the Father's stern justice and appease the divine wrath. These teachings originated in a praise-worthy effort to make the gospel of the kingdom more acceptable to the disbelieving Jews. Though these efforts failed as far as winning the Jews were concerned, they did not fail to confuse and alienate many honest souls in all subsequent generations.*

[149:2.4] *The second great blunder of the Master's early followers, and one which all subsequent generations have persisted in perpetuating was to organize the Christian teaching so completely about the person of Jesus. This overemphasis of the personality of Jesus in the theology of Christianity has worked to obscure his teachings, and all of this has made it increasingly difficult for Jews, Mohammedans, Hindus, and other eastern religionists to accept the teachings of Jesus. We would not belittle the place of the person of Jesus in a religion, which might bear his name, but we would not permit such consideration to eclipse his inspired life or to supplant his saving message: the fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man.*

Jesus said many things that were not included in the *Bible*. For example, although the *Bible* did not bring it out, The Urantia Book mentioned that Jesus took a tour of Rome, which consumed most of his 28th year and all his 29th year. Jesus lived out his life without anyone except John Zebedee of Bethsaida, (one of Jesus' close friends,) knowing he had made this extensive trip. Some of Jesus' friends thought he had returned to Damascus, and others thought he had gone to India; his own family was inclined to believe he was in Alexandria. When Jesus returned to Jerusalem, he did nothing to make his family think otherwise.

Before starting his trip, by what seemed to be chance, Jesus met a wealthy traveler named Gonod and his son Ganid, a young man 17 years old. This father and son were from India and on their way to visit Rome and other places in the Mediterranean. They had arranged to visit Jerusalem during the Passover, hoping to find someone they could hire as an interpreter for the father's business and as a tutor for the son. After meeting Jesus, the father insisted Jesus travel with them. Jesus told Gonod about his family's situation: that

his father had died some years before in a construction accident, and he had a responsibility to care for his younger brothers and sisters and his mother. Jesus was the oldest of his parent's eight children; only one of the boys was old enough to help care for the family and he was quite young. Jesus told Gonod it would be unfair to leave his family for almost two years. Gonod agreed to pay Jesus one year's salary in advance, and Jesus accepted this offer.

During the previous years, Jesus had become good friends with a man named John Zebedee whose father was a shipbuilder; Jesus had worked for him for a couple of years. He confided in John Zebedee not to let anyone know about his trip, and entrusted John to give His family monthly a certain amount of the money Gonod had advanced, until there was no money left; John said he would look after Jesus' family during His absence.

Throughout the tour of Rome, Jesus was known as the "scribe from Damascus." On his return trip, he was known as the "Jewish tutor" of the youth Ganid. While working four months at Damascus, Jesus picked up the basics of the language Ganid and Gonod spoke; and there Jesus labored on translating Greek texts into one of the languages of India; Jesus was assisted by a native of Gonod's home district.

While on the Mediterranean trip, Jesus spent about half of each day teaching Ganid and acting as an interpreter for Gonod's business conferences and social contacts. The remainder of the day was his own, which Jesus devoted to making intimate friends with his fellow humans.

An Analysis of Jonah

While in Joppa, Jesus met Gadiah, a Philistine who worked as a tanner for a rich merchant named Simon. Gonod's agent in Mesopotamia transacted much business with Simon; Gonod and his son wanted to visit Simon when they reached Caesarea. While in Joppa, Jesus and Gadiah became good friends. Gadiah was a seeker and Jesus was the truth giver for that generation on earth.

One evening after Jesus and the young Philistine finished their evening meal, they strolled by the seashore. Gadiah did not know that his friend the "Scribe of Damascus" was versed in the Hebrew tradition when he pointed out to Jesus the quay from which it was believed that Jonah had started his troubled voyage to Tarshish. When he had finished his remarks, he asked Jesus, "Do you think the big fish really swallowed Jonah?" Jesus realized that Gadiah's life was greatly influenced by this traditional tale which teaches the absurdity of trying to run away from responsibilities. Jesus made sure he wouldn't say anything that would suddenly destroy the young man's means for practical living. Answering his question, Jesus said:

[130:1.2] *My friend, we are all Jonahs with lives to live in accordance with the will of God, and at all times when we seek to escape the present duty of living by running away to far-off enticements, we thereby put ourselves in the immediate control of those influences which are not directed by the powers of truth and the forces of righteousness. The flight from duty is the sacrifice of truth. The escape from the service of light and life can only result in those distressing conflicts with the difficult whales of selfishness which lead eventually to darkness and death unless such God-forsaking Jonahs shall turn their hearts, even when in the very depths of despair, to seek after God and his goodness. And when such disheartened souls sincerely seek for God—hunger for truth and thirst for righteousness there is nothing that can hold them in further captivity. No matter into what great depths they may have fallen, when they seek the light with a whole heart, the spirit of the Lord God of heaven will deliver them from their captivity; the evil circumstances of life will spew them out upon the dry land of fresh opportunities for renewed service and wiser living.*

How often have some of us tried to escape our problems by relocating, only to find the problems go right along with us? Eventually we learn we are the problem. I recall many years ago, as a young man of around 26 years old, I tried to escape my problems by running away. At that time, I lived in Brooklyn, New York, and tried to escape by going to Virginia to live with my grandmother, only to find my problem was right there with me. I was my problem. I needed to make some changes. So, we see the story of Jonah is an allegory that some of us experience every day in our attempt to escape the problems of life.

Jesus interpreted the tale of Jonah: when we try to escape our responsibility, we place ourselves in the wrong vibration, we allow ourselves to be swallowed by the whale of selfishness, and anything can happen to us. The same is true about our religion; we have been misled in our religious beliefs. Because we are in the wrong vibration, we are not receiving the full benefit of the Holy Spirit Jesus promised he would send to humanity. Some people pray and pray but nothing ever happens, well, they are in the wrong vibration.

Gadiah was truly moved by Jesus' teachings, and they talked way into the night by the seashore. Before they called it a night, they prayed together and for each other. This is the same Gadiah who later listened to Peter's preaching and became a profound believer in Jesus and was instrumental in influencing Simon, the wealthy leather merchant, to embrace Christianity.

On Jesus' last visit with Gadiah, they discussed good and evil. Gadiah was troubled by a feeling of injustice in the world because the evil in the world exists alongside the good. Gadiah asked, "After all who created evil?" It was still believed in those days God created both good and evil. Gadiah asked: "How can God, if he is infinitely good, permit us to suffer the sorrows of evil?" In answering Gadiah's question, Jesus explained that God is love, therefore, he must be good and his goodness is so great it cannot contain such small and unreal things as evil. God is good; there is no place in Him for negative evil. Evil is the immature actions of those who are resistant to goodness, who reject beauty and are disloyal to the truth. Evil is in the world because we humans choose to do evil; if we did not act evil, evilness could not exist; therefore, humans are the source of evil.

Throughout life, I have noticed some people tend to blame God for every tragic or negative experience they encounter; if someone they love gets cancer or some other terminal disease, they want to know why did God allow it to happen. These people never consider what kind of life the person lived, nor do they consider the genetic transmission or the stress the person lived under for years. Nor did they ponder the effect of the foods the person ate, foods that weren't good for them. And they ask God, why? Often these same people refuse to forgive another person for a wrong. Their hatred overwhelms them, and their aura becomes saturated with the vibration of hate. Through the years, they draw more of this conglomeration of hate vibration to themselves, and it begins to take a toll on their physical bodies; their bodies begin to break down from the toxin of evil vibrations. They are so selfish they are incapable of seeing that it is impractical for God to intervene in our lives every time something bad happens to us, and if he did, there wouldn't be the world as we know it. It is taking humans a long time to understand the law of cause and effect.

Jesus, Ganid, and his father stayed in Caesarea longer than expected because one of the huge steering paddles of the ship on which they intended to sail was discovered to be in danger of splitting. The captain of the ship decided to remain in port while a new paddle was built. There was a shortage of woodworkers qualified for this job, so Jesus, a master carpenter, volunteered to help. During the evening, Jesus and his friends walked along the beautiful walls that served as a promenade around the port. Ganid was fascinated by Jesus' explanation of the water system of the city, and the means by which the tides were utilized to flush the city's streets and sewers. On the second afternoon, Jesus, Ganid and Gonod

attended a performance in an immense amphitheater which could seat 20,000 people, and that evening, they went to see a Greek play at the theater. On the morning of the third day, they made a formal visit to the governor's palace. Caesarea was the capital of Palestine and the residence of the Roman procurator.

At the inn where they stayed, Jesus had several meetings with a Far-Eastern merchant who spoke Greek very well. The merchant was very impressed with Jesus' philosophy of life and he never forgot Jesus' words of wisdom concerning the living of the heavenly life while on earth using daily submission to the will of the heavenly Father. This merchant was a Taoist, and he became a devoted believer in one Universal God. When this man returned home to Mongolia, he began to teach these advanced doctrines to his sons, and because of these teachings, his oldest son became a Taoist priest. This young man wielded great influence on behalf of advanced truth throughout his life, and was followed by a son and a grandson who were also devotedly loyal to the doctrine of one God

One of the young men who worked with Jesus on the steering paddle became interested in the words Jesus spoke from time to time as they worked in the shipyard. When Jesus claimed the Father in heaven is interested in the welfare of his children on earth, this young Greek said: [130:2.4] *"If God is interested in me, why doesn't He take away the cruel and unjust foreman of this workshop?"* The young man was startled when Jesus answered: *Since you know the way of kindness and value justice, perhaps the Gods have brought this erring man near that you may lead him into this better way. Maybe you are the salt which is to make this brother more agreeable to all other men; that is, if you have not lost your savor.* The young man understood that Jesus meant it was perhaps his destiny to help the cruel foreman to see his erring ways.

Many of the questions we humans have about life are discussed in The Urantia Book. For example, one afternoon, Jesus and his student Ganid had both enjoyed playing with a very intelligent shepherd dog, and Ganid wanted to know if the dog had a soul and whether it had a will. Jesus responded the dog has a mind and can know his master, or material things, but cannot know God, which is a spirit. The dog does not possess a spiritual nature, and is not capable of enjoying a spiritual experience. The dog may have a will derived from nature and increased by training, but the dog's power of mind is not a spiritual force as in humanity. Humans have unique minds, indwelt by a fragment of God, which can discern and search for God. A dog's mind is not reflective like the human mind. The dog is not capable of discriminating higher moral meaning or choosing spiritual and eternal values. It is the possession of such powers of spiritual discrimination and the ability to choose the truth, which makes mortals moral beings. Jesus went on to explain it is the lack of such mental powers in animals that make it forever impossible for the animal to develop language or to experience anything equivalent to personality survival in eternity. After this day's conversation with Jesus, Ganid never again believed in the transmigration of the souls of men into the bodies of animals.

It is a Hindu belief a human soul can transmigrate into an animal's body after death if that soul is degraded in vibration. Many years ago, I studied Hinduism, not because I wanted to become a Hindu, but because I wanted to understand what other cultures believe, and why. I am glad I studied their religion, and I understand why they believe as they do. We in the Western world have no right to judge the Hindus; we should leave that up to the Higher Beings who understand such things.

[36:2.17] *Sphere Number Four and its tributary satellites are devoted to the study of the evolution of creature life in general and to the evolutionary antecedents of any one life level in particular. The original life plasm of an evolutionary world must contain the full potential for all future developmental variations and for all subsequent evolutionary changes and*

modifications. The provision for such far-reaching projects of life metamorphosis may require the appearance of many apparently useless forms of animal and vegetable life. Such by-products of planetary evolution, foreseen or unforeseen, appear upon the stage of action only to disappear, but in and through all this long process there runs the thread of the wise and intelligent formulations of the original designers of the planetary life plan and species scheme. The manifold by-products of biologic evolution are all essential to the final and full function of the higher intelligent forms of life, notwithstanding that great outward disharmony may prevail from time to time in the long upward struggle of the higher creatures to effect the mastery of the lower forms of life, many of which are sometimes so antagonistic to the peace and comfort of the evolving will creatures. In other words, they higher beings are telling us that animals are indispensable to man's intellect as well as his physical evolution, and I would imagine this is how cell lines are developed over hundreds of thousands of years through the bodies of planetary animals.

The Discourse on True Religion

One day while Jesus and his apostles and evangelists were on their way from northern Galilee to the Phoenician coast, they stopped for rest and Jesus began to lecture them.

[155:5] *This memorable discourse on religion, summarized and restated in modern phraseology, gave expression to the following truths: While the religions of the world have a double origin—natural and revelatory—at any one time and among any one people there are to be found three distinct forms of religious devotion. And these three manifestations of the religious urge are:*

1. Primitive religion. The seminatural and instinctive urge to fear mysterious energies and worship superior forces, chiefly a religion of the physical nature, the religion of fear.

2. The religion of civilization. The advancing religious concepts and practices of the civilizing races—the religion of the mind—the intellectual theology of the authority of established religious tradition.

3. True religion—the religion of revelation. The revelation of supernatural values, a partial insight into eternal realities, a glimpse of the goodness and beauty of the infinite character of the Father in heaven—the religion of the spirit as demonstrated in human experience.

The religion of the physical senses and the superstitious fears of natural man, the Master refused to belittle, though he deplored the fact that so much of this primitive form of worship should persist in the religious forms of the more intelligent races of mankind. Jesus made it clear that the great difference between the religion of the mind and the religion of the spirit is that, while the former is upheld by ecclesiastical authority, the latter is wholly based on human experience.

And then the Master, in his hour of teaching, went on to make clear these truths:

Until the races become highly intelligent and more fully civilized, there will persist many of those childlike and superstitious ceremonies which are so characteristic of the evolutionary religious practices of primitive and backward peoples. Until the human race progresses to the level of a higher and more general recognition of the realities of spiritual experience, large numbers of men and women will continue to show a personal preference for those religions of authority which require only intellectual assent, in contrast to the religion of the spirit, which entails active participation of mind and soul in the faith adventure of grappling with the rigorous realities of progressive human experience.

The acceptance of the traditional religions of authority presents the easy way out for man's urge to seek satisfaction for the longings of his spiritual nature. The settled, crystallized,

and established religions of authority afford a ready refuge to which the distracted and distraught soul of man may flee when harassed by fear and tormented by uncertainty. Such a religion requires of its devotees, as the price to be paid for its satisfactions and assurances, only a passive and purely intellectual assent.

And for a long time there will live on earth those timid, fearful, and hesitant individuals who will prefer thus to secure their religious consolations, even though, in so casting their lot with the religions of authority, they compromise the sovereignty of personality, debase the dignity of self-respect, and utterly surrender the right to participate in that most thrilling and inspiring of all possible human experiences: the personal quest for truth, the exhilaration of facing the perils of intellectual discovery, the determination to explore the realities of personal religious experience, the supreme satisfaction of experiencing the personal triumph of the actual realization of the victory of spiritual faith over intellectual doubt as it is honestly won in the supreme adventure of all human existence—man seeking God, for himself and as himself, and finding him.

The religion of the spirit means effort, struggle, conflict, faith, determination, love, loyalty, and progress. The religion of the mind—the theology of authority—requires little or none of these exertions from its formal believers. Tradition is a safe refuge and an easy path for those fearful and halfhearted souls who instinctively shun the spirit struggles and mental uncertainties associated with those faith voyages of daring adventure out upon the high seas of unexplored truth in search for the farther shores of spiritual realities as they may be discovered by the progressive human mind and experienced by the evolving human soul.

And Jesus went on to say: "At Jerusalem the religious leaders have formulated the various doctrines of their traditional teachers and the prophets of other days into an established system of intellectual beliefs, a religion of authority.

The appeal of all such religions is largely to the mind. And now are we about to enter upon a deadly conflict with such a religion since we will so shortly begin the bold proclamation of a new religion—a religion which is not a religion in the present-day meaning of that word, a religion that makes its chief appeal to the divine spirit of my Father which resides in the mind of man; a religion which shall derive its authority from the fruits of its acceptance that will so certainly appear in the personal experience of all who really and truly become believers in the truths of this higher spiritual communion."

Pointing out each of the twenty-four and calling them by name, Jesus said: "And now, which one of you would prefer to take this easy path of conformity to an established and fossilized religion, as defended by the Pharisees at Jerusalem, rather than to suffer the difficulties and persecutions attendant upon the mission of proclaiming a better way of salvation to men while you realize the satisfaction of discovering for yourselves the beauties of the realities of a living and personal experience in the eternal truths and supreme grandeurs of the kingdom of heaven? Are you fearful, soft, and ease seeking? Are you afraid to trust your future in the hands of the God of truth, whose sons you are? Are you distrustful of the Father, whose children you are? Will you go back to the easy path of the certainty and intellectual settledness of the religion of traditional authority, or will you gird yourselves to go forward with me into that uncertain and troublous future of proclaiming the new truths of the religion of the spirit, the kingdom of heaven in the hearts of men?"

All twenty-four of his hearers rose to their feet, intending to signify their united and loyal response to this, one of the few emotional appeals which Jesus ever made to them, but he raised his hand and stopped them, saying: "Go now apart by yourselves, each man alone with the Father, and there find the unemotional answer to my question, and having found such a true and sincere attitude of soul, speak that answer freely and boldly to my Father and your Father, whose infinite life of love is the very spirit of the religion we proclaim."

The evangelists and apostles went apart by themselves for a short time. Their spirits were uplifted, their minds were inspired, and their emotions mightily stirred by what Jesus had said. But when Andrew called them together, the Master said only: "Let us resume our journey. We go into Phoenicia to tarry for a season, and all of you should pray the Father to transform your emotions of mind and body into the higher loyalties of mind and the more satisfying experiences of the spirit."

As they journeyed on down the road, the twenty-four were silent, but presently they began to talk one with another, and by three o'clock that afternoon they could not go farther; they came to a halt, and Peter, going up to Jesus, said: "Master, you have spoken to us the words of life and truth. We would hear more; we beseech you to speak to us further concerning these matters."

The Second Discourse on Religion

[155:6] And so, while they paused in the shade of the hillside, Jesus continued to teach them regarding the religion of the spirit, in substance saying:

You have come out from among those of your fellows who choose to remain satisfied with a religion of mind, who crave security and prefer conformity. You have elected to exchange your feelings of authoritative certainty for the assurances of the spirit of adventurous and progressive faith. You have dared to protest against the grueling bondage of institutional religion and to reject the authority of the traditions of record which are now regarded as the word of God. Our Father did indeed speak through Moses, Elijah, Isaiah, Amos, and Hosea, but he did not cease to minister words of truth to the world when these prophets of old made an end of their utterances. My father is no respecter of races or generations in that the word of truth is vouchsafed one age and withheld from another. Commit not the folly of calling that divine which is wholly human, and fail not to discern the words of truth which come not through the traditional oracles of supposed inspiration.

I have called upon you to be born again, to be born of the spirit. I have called you out of the darkness of authority and the lethargy of tradition into the transcendent light of the realization of the possibility of making for yourselves the greatest discovery possible for the human soul to make—the supernal experience of finding God for yourself, in yourself, and of yourself, and of doing all this as a fact in your own personal experience. And so may you pass from death to life, from the authority of tradition to the experience of knowing God; thus will you pass from darkness to light, from a racial faith inherited to a personal faith achieved by actual experience; and thereby will you progress from a theology of mind handed down by your ancestors to a true religion of spirit which shall be built up in your souls as an eternal endowment.

Your religion shall change from the mere intellectual belief in traditional authority to the actual experience of that living faith which is able to grasp the reality of God and all that relates to the divine spirit of the Father. The religion of the mind ties you hopelessly to the past; the religion of the spirit consists in progressive revelation and ever beckons you on toward higher and holier achievements in spiritual ideals and eternal realities.

While the religion of authority may impart a present feeling of settled security, you pay for such a transient satisfaction the price of the loss of your spiritual freedom and religious liberty. My Father does not require of you as the price of entering the kingdom of heaven that you should force yourself to subscribe to a belief in things which are spiritually repugnant, unholy, and untruthful. It is not required of you that your own sense of mercy, justice, and truth should be outraged by submission to an outworn system of religious forms and ceremonies. The religion of the spirit leaves you forever free to follow the truth wherever the

leadings of the spirit may take you. And who can judge—perhaps this spirit may have something to impart to this generation, which other generations have refused to hear?

Shame on those false religious teachers who would drag hungry souls back into the dim and distant past and there leave them! And so are these unfortunate persons doomed to become frightened by every new discovery, while they are discomfited by every new revelation of truth. The prophet who said, "He will be kept in perfect peace whose mind is stayed on God," was not a mere intellectual believer in authoritative theology. This truth-knowing human had discovered God; he was not merely talking about God.

I admonish you to give up the practice of always quoting the prophets of old and praising the heroes of Israel, and instead aspire to become living prophets of the Most High and spiritual heroes of the coming kingdom. To honor the God-knowing leaders of the past may indeed be worthwhile, but why, in so doing, should you sacrifice the supreme experience of human existence: finding God for yourselves and knowing him in your own souls?

Every race of mankind has its own mental outlook upon human existence; therefore must the religion of the mind ever run true to these various racial viewpoints. Never can the religions of authority come to unification. Human unity and mortal brotherhood can be achieved only by and through the superendowment of the religion of the spirit. Racial minds may differ, but all mankind is indwelt by the same divine and eternal spirit. The hope of human brotherhood can only be realized when, and as, the divergent mind religions of authority become impregnated with, and overshadowed by, the unifying and ennobling religion of the spirit—the religion of personal spiritual experience.

The religions of authority can only divide men and set them in conscientious array against each other; the religion of the spirit will progressively draw men together and cause them to become understandingly sympathetic with one another. The religions of authority require of men uniformity in belief, but this is impossible of realization in the present state of the world. The religion of the spirit requires only unity of experience—uniformity of destiny—making full allowance for diversity of belief. The religion of the spirit requires only uniformity of insight, not uniformity of viewpoint and outlook. The religion of the spirit does not demand uniformity of intellectual views, only unity of spirit feeling. The religions of authority crystallize into lifeless creeds; the religion of the spirit grows into the increasing joy and liberty of ennobling deeds of loving service and merciful ministration.

But watch, lest any of you look with disdain upon the children of Abraham because they have fallen on these evil days of traditional barrenness. Our forefathers gave themselves up to the persistent and passionate search for God, and they found him as no other whole race of men have ever known him since the times of Adam, who knew much of this as he was himself Son of God. My Father has not failed to mark the long and untiring struggle of Israel, ever since the days of Moses, to find God and to know God. For weary generations the Jews have not ceased to toil, sweat, groan, travail, and endure the sufferings and experience the sorrows of a misunderstood and despised people, all in order that they might come a little nearer the discovery of the truth about God. And, notwithstanding all the failures and falterings of Israel, our fathers progressively, from Moses to the times of Amos and Hosea, did reveal increasingly to the whole world an ever clearer and more truthful picture of the eternal God. And so was the way prepared for the still greater revelation of the Father which you have been called to share.

Never forget there is only one adventure which is more satisfying and thrilling than the attempt to discover the will of the living God, and that is the supreme experience of honestly trying to do that divine will. And fail not to remember that the will of God can be done in any earthly occupation. Some callings are not holy and others secular. All things are sacred in the lives of those who are spirit led; that is, subordinated to truth, ennobled by love, dominated by

mercy, and restrained by fairness—justice. The spirit which my Father and I shall send into the world is not only the Spirit of Truth but also the spirit of idealistic beauty.

You must cease to seek for the word of God only on the pages of the olden records of theologic authority. Those who are born of the spirit of God shall henceforth discern the word of God regardless of whence it appears to take origin. Divine truth must not be discounted because the channel of its bestowal is apparently human. Many of your brethren have minds which accept the theory of God while they spiritually fail to realize the presence of God. And that is just the reason why I have so often taught you that the kingdom of heaven can best be realized by acquiring the spiritual attitude of a sincere child. It is not the mental immaturity of the child that I commend to you but rather the **spiritual simplicity** of such an easy-believing and fully-trusting little one. It is not so important that you should know about the fact of God as that you should increasingly grow in the ability to **feel the presence of God**.

When you once begin to find God in your soul, presently you will begin to discover him in other men's souls and eventually in all the creatures and creations of a mighty universe. But what chance does the Father have to appear as a God of supreme loyalties and divine ideals in the souls of men who give little or no time to the thoughtful contemplation of such eternal realities? While the mind is not the seat of the spiritual nature, it is indeed the gateway thereto.

But do not make the mistake of trying to prove to other men that you have found God; you cannot consciously produce such valid proof, albeit there are two positive and powerful demonstrations of the fact that you are God-knowing, and they are:

1. The fruits of the spirit of God showing forth in your daily routine life.
2. The fact that your entire life plan furnishes positive proof that you have unreservedly risked everything you are and have on the adventure of survival after death in the pursuit of the hope of finding the God of eternity, whose presence you have foretasted in time.

Now, mistake not, my Father will ever respond to the faintest flicker of faith. He takes note of the physical and superstitious emotions of the primitive man. And with those honest but fearful souls whose faith is so weak that it amounts to little more than an intellectual conformity to a passive attitude of assent to religions of authority, the Father is ever alert to honor and foster even all such feeble attempts to reach out for him. But you who have been called out of darkness into the light are expected to believe with a whole heart; your faith shall dominate the combined attitudes of body, mind, and spirit.

You are my apostles, and to you religion shall not become a theologic shelter to which you may flee in fear of facing the rugged realities of spiritual progress and idealistic adventure; but rather shall your religion become the fact of real experience which testifies that God has found you, idealized, ennobled, and spiritualized you, and that you have enlisted in the eternal adventure of finding the God who has thus found and sonshipped you.

And when Jesus had finished speaking, he beckoned to Andrew and, pointing to the west toward Phoenicia, said: "Let us be on our way."

Chapter 11

The Wedding at Cana

Now we will fast forward to a wedding Jesus was invited to where he performed the Miracle of the Wine. During this period of history in the Middle East, especially among the Jews, people expected prophets or messiahs to perform great wonders to prove that they were of God. But Jesus didn't believe great wonders proved anything; he didn't like to disrupt the laws of nature. By the time of the wedding at Cana, Jesus had already performed many healings, always within the laws of nature in ways we earthlings don't understand. Jesus' mother and family expected him to perform miracles, but he consistently refused.

The wedding at Cana was an important wedding. Jesus, his mother and most of his brothers and sisters attended among a great multitude of people, about three-quarters of whom were uninvited. The hosts soon ran out of wine. The many uninvited guests attended because Jesus led the pre-wedding procession. Jesus was becoming very well-known in that region and had performed many healings.

By this time, A.D. 26, Jesus was completely aware of his human existence, his divine pre-existence and his combined human and divine natures.

As the wedding day progressed, Jesus became more conscious that people expected him to perform a miracle, especially his family who were looking for him to announce his coming kingdom by some startling and supernatural manifestation. Jesus' family and the apostles expected Jesus to sit on the throne of David, gather an army and crush their Roman oppressors. But Jesus had come to Urantia as the prince of peace.

Early in the afternoon at the wedding, Mary, Jesus' mother, found her son James, and together they approached Jesus to ask him at what hour he had planned to make himself known as the "supernatural one." Jesus said, "If you love me, then be willing to tarry with me while I wait upon the will of my Father who is in heaven." [137:4.4] This move of his mother was a disappointment to the human Jesus. When Jesus had retreated to the hills to decide how he would go about presenting God's kingdom to humanity, he had decided against an outward demonstration of his divinity. For several hours, Mary was depressed. She said to James, "I cannot understand him; what can it all mean? Is there no end to his strange conduct?" [137:4.5]

The wedding proceeded with a silence of expectation. Then, the word went around that the carpenter and boat builder, announced by John the Baptist as "The Deliverer," would show his hand during the evening festivities, perhaps at the wedding supper. But all expectation of a supernatural demonstration was removed from the apostles when Jesus called them together. He said to them, [137:4.9] *Think not that I have come to this place to work some wonder for the gratification of the curious or for the conviction of those who doubt. Rather are we here to wait upon the will of our Father who art in heaven.* When Mary and others saw him gathering with his apostles, they concluded something remarkable was about to happen. They all sat down with high expectations to enjoy the wedding supper and evening festivities.

The father of the bridegroom had purchased enough wine for all who were invited to the wedding; however he didn't know that the marriage of his son would be an event so closely related to the expected announcement of Jesus as the "Messianic Deliverer," and that people would invite themselves. He was delighted to have Jesus as his honored guest, but before the wedding supper was over one of his servants brought him the bad news that the wine was running low.

When supper ended and the guests were strolling about the garden, the bridegroom's mother informed Mary, Jesus' mother, that the supply of wine had run out. Mary told her not to worry, that she would speak to her son, and she said, *He will help us.* This section is so touching, I wish to quote it for you, dear reader:

[137:4.8] *Throughout a period of many years, Mary had always turned to Jesus for help in every crisis of their home life at Nazareth, so that it was only natural for her to think of him at this time. But this ambitious mother had still other motives for appealing to her eldest son on this occasion. As Jesus was standing alone in the corner of the garden, his mother approached him, saying, "My son, they have no wine." And Jesus answered, "My good woman, what have I to do with that?" Said Mary, "But I believe your hour has come; cannot you help us?" Jesus replied: "Again I declare that I have not come to do things in this wise. Why do you trouble me again with these matters?" And then, breaking down in tears, Mary entreated him, "But, my son, I promised them that you would help us; won't you please do something for me?" And then spoke Jesus: "Woman, what have you to do with making such promises? See that you do it not again. We must in all things wait upon the will of the Father in heaven."*

[137:4.9] *Mary, the mother of Jesus, was crushed; she was stunned! As she stood there before him motionless, with the tears streaming down her face, the human heart of Jesus was overcome with compassion for the woman who had borne him in the flesh; and bending forward, he laid his hand tenderly upon her head, saying: "Now, now, Mother Mary, grieve not over my apparently hard sayings, nor have I not many times told you that I have come only to do the will of my heavenly Father? Most gladly would I do what you ask of me if it were a part of the Father's will"—and Jesus stopped short, he hesitated. Mary seemed to sense that something was happening. Leaping up, she threw her arms around Jesus' neck, kissed him, and rushed off to the servants' quarters, saying, "Whatever my son says, that do." But Jesus said nothing. He now realized that he had already said—or rather desirefully thought—too much.*

[137:4.10] *Mary was dancing with glee. She did not know how the wine would be produced, but she confidently believed that she had finally persuaded her first-born son to assert his authority, to dare to step forth and claim his position and exhibit his Messianic power. And, because of the presence and association of certain universe powers and personalities, of which all those present were wholly ignorant, she was not to be disappointed. The wine Mary desired and which Jesus, the God-man, humanly and sympathetically wished for, was forthcoming.*

[137:4.11] *Near at hand stood six waterpots of stone, filled with water, holding about twenty gallons apiece. This water was intended for subsequent use in the final purification ceremonies of the wedding celebration. The commotion of the servants about these huge stone vessels, under the busy direction of his mother, attracted Jesus' attention, and going over, he observed that they were drawing wine out of them by the pitcherful.*

[137:4.12] *It was gradually dawning upon Jesus what had happened. Of all persons present at the marriage feast of Cana, Jesus was the most surprised. Others had expected him to work a wonder, but that was just what he had purposed not to do. And then the Son of Man recalled the admonition of his Personalized Thought Adjuster in the hills. He recounted how the Adjuster had warned him about the inability of any power or personality to deprive him of the creator prerogative of independence of time. On this occasion power transformers, midwayers, and all other required personalities were assembled near the water and other necessary elements, and in the face of the expressed wish of the Universe Creator Sovereign, there was no escaping the instantaneous appearance of wine. And this occurrence was made doubly certain since the Personalized Adjuster had signified that the execution of the Son's desire was in no way a contravention of the Father's will.*

There was no hocus-pocus performed here. The compassion Jesus felt for his mother and his desire to help her was enough for those powerful beings in the higher dimensions to bring his desire into manifestation almost instantaneously. Usually, when we wish something into manifestation, it takes time, and we must be persistent. Jesus being a Creator Son, the Higher Beings brought Jesus' desire into manifestation instantly.

God's Wrath

During April, A.D. 26 Jesus and the Apostles worked in Jerusalem ministering to the people; this was the month of the Passover festivities. A man by the name of Jacob was attending the Passover festivities. Jacob was a wealthy Jewish trader from Crete, and he came to Andrew, one of Jesus' apostles, requesting to see Jesus privately. Andrew arranged this meeting with Jesus at the home of one called Flavius

the evening of the next day. This man could not understand Jesus' teaching and desired to understand it better; he wanted to know more about the kingdom of God.

The next day at Flavius' home, Jacob said to Jesus: [142:2.1] *"But Rabbi, Moses and the olden prophets tell us that Yahweh is a jealous God, a God of great wrath and fierce anger. The prophets say he hates evildoers and takes vengeance on those who obey not his law. You and your disciples tell us that God is a kind and compassionate Father who so loves all men that he would welcome them into his new kingdom of heaven which you proclaim is so near at hand."*

When Jacob finished speaking, Jesus said: [142 :2.2] *Jacob, you well stated the teaching of the olden prophets who taught the children of their generation in accordance with the light of their day. Our Father in Paradise is changeless. But the concept of his nature has enlarged and grown from the days of Moses down through the days of Amos and even to the generation of the prophet Isaiah. And now have I come in the flesh to reveal the Father in new glory, and to show forth his love and mercy to all men on all worlds. As the gospel of this kingdom shall spread over the world with its message of good cheer and goodwill to all men, there will grow up improved and better relations among the families of all nations. As time passes, fathers and their children will love each other more, and thus will be brought about a better understanding of the love of the Father in heaven for his children on earth. Remember, Jacob, that a good and true father not only loves his family as a whole—as a family—but he also truly loves and affectionately cares for each individual member.*

After talking for a while about the Father's character, Jesus paused and said to Jacob, [142:2.3] *"You, Jacob, being the father of many, know well the truth of these words."* Jacob said to Jesus, *"But, Master, who told you I was the father of six children? How did you know this about me?"* And Jesus said, *"Suffice it to say that the Father and the Son know all things, for indeed they see all. Loving your children as a father on earth, you must now accept as a reality the love of the heavenly Father for you—not just for all the children of Abraham, but for you, your individual soul."*

Then Jesus went on to say: [142:2.4] *"When your children are very young and immature, and when you must chastise them, they may reflect that their father is angry and filled with resentful wrath. Their immaturity cannot penetrate beyond the punishment to discern the father's farseeing and corrective affection. But when these same children become grown-up men and women, would it not be folly for them to cling to these earlier and misconceived notions regarding their father? As men and women, they should now discern their father's love in all these disciplines. And should not mankind, as the centuries pass, come the better to understand the true nature and loving character of the Father in heaven? What profit have you from successive generations of spiritual illumination if you persist in viewing God as Moses and the prophets saw him? I say to you, Jacob, under the bright light of this hour you should see the Father as none of those who have gone before ever beheld him. And thus seeing him, you should rejoice to enter the kingdom wherein such a merciful Father rules, and you should seek to have his will of love dominate your life henceforth.*

And Jacob answered: [142:2.5] *"Rabbi, I believe; I desire that you lead me into the Father's kingdom.*

The Purpose of Affliction

One of the private interviews Jesus held in Zebedee's garden was with Nathaniel, one of his twelve apostles. Nathaniel asked Jesus: [148:5.1] *Master, though I am beginning to understand why you refuse to practice healing indiscriminately, I am still at a loss to understand why the loving Father in heaven permits so many of his children on earth to suffer so many afflictions.* The Master answered Nathaniel, saying:

[148:5.2] *Nathaniel, you and many others are thus perplexed because you do not comprehend how the natural order of this world has been so many times upset by the sinful adventures of certain rebellious traitors to the Father's will. And I have come to make a beginning of setting these things in order. But many ages will be required to restore this part of the universe to former paths and thus release the children of men from the extra burdens of sin and rebellion. The presence of evil alone is sufficient test for the ascension of man — sin is not essential to survival.*

[148:5.3] *But, my son, you should know that the Father does not purposely afflict his children. Man brings down upon himself unnecessary affliction as a result of his persistent refusal to walk in the better ways of the divine will. Affliction is potential in evil, but much of it has been produced by sin and iniquity. Many unusual events have transpired on this world, and it is not strange that all thinking men should be perplexed by the scenes of suffering and affliction which they witness. But of one thing you may be sure: The Father does not send affliction as an arbitrary punishment for wrongdoing. The imperfections and handicaps of evil are inherent; the penalties of sin are inevitable; the destroying consequences of iniquity are inexorable. Man should not blame God for those afflictions which are the natural result of the life which he chooses to live; neither should man complain of those experiences which are a part of life as it is lived on this world. It is the Father's will that mortal man should work persistently and consistently toward the betterment of his estate on earth. Intelligent application would enable man to overcome much of his earthly misery.*

148:5.4] *"Nathaniel, it is our mission to help men solve their spiritual problems and in this way to quicken their minds so that they may be the better prepared and inspired to go about solving their manifold material problems. I know of your confusion as you have read the Scriptures. All too often there has prevailed a tendency to ascribe to God the responsibility for everything which ignorant man fails to understand. The Father is not personally responsible for all you may fail to comprehend. Do not doubt the love of the Father just because some just and wise law of his ordaining chances to afflict you because you have innocently or deliberately transgressed such a divine ordinance.*

We have already learned that the rebellions of Caligastia, the Planetary Prince, and Lucifer, the System Sovereign, and the default of Adam and Eve, caused and continue to cause great suffering on our planet. Jesus explains that the imperfection and handicaps of evil are inherent, but we humans can change our disposition. "And recently scientists have discovered that we can alter our genes in a much shorter period than previously believed; the workings of the genes are not carved in stone. Well-known doctor Bruce Lipton shows in his book, *The Biology of Life*, that our beliefs, true or false, positive or negative, affect our genetic activity and alter our genetic code. And all this coincides with God's plan of free will. We can no longer blame our genes for what happens to us. We ourselves can take responsibility for our lives and especially for our response to the circumstances of our lives.

Jesus also states that it is the Father's will that mortal man should work persistently and consistently toward the betterment of his estate on earth. He says that intelligent application would enable man to overcome much of his misery. If we are persistent, we can overcome. Many people do overcome; you can read my autobiography, *Hard Times Don't Last Always*, and learn what I had to overcome as an abused child.

Resurrection of Lazarus

Very late Sunday night, February 26, 30 A.D., a runner from a small village called Bethany arrived at Philadelphia where Jesus and his apostles were ministering to the people. This runner was bearing a message from Lazarus' sisters, Martha and Mary, saying: *Lord, he whom you love is very sick.*

Jesus sent a message back saying: *This sickness is really not to the death. Doubt not that it may be used to glorify God and exalt the Son.* [167:4.1]. Jesus was very fond of Mary, Martha and their brother, Lazarus. Jesus arrived in Bethany four days after Lazarus died. Of all the many occasions when Jesus healed and restored sight to the blind, his most celebrated work was raising Lazarus from the dead.

When Jesus reached the place where Lazarus was buried, a small group of Lazarus' friends gathered around. The people present at the burial site were not aware of the presence of a vast array of celestial beings in another dimension under the leadership of Gabriel and simply waiting to execute the bidding of their beloved sovereign, Jesus of Nazareth.

Jesus asked that the stone be moved from the entrance to the tomb where Lazarus lay. Martha didn't understand why Jesus wanted the stone moved; she thought perhaps Jesus wanted to see Lazarus one last time. They hesitated to roll away the stone, and Jesus said: *Did I not tell you at the first that this sickness was not to the death? Have I not come to fulfill my promise? And after I came to you, did I not say that, if*

you would only believe, you should see the glory of God? [168:1.12] When Jesus finished speaking his apostles, with the help of neighbors, rolled the stone away from the entrance to the tomb.

A group of about 45 people stood at the tomb. They could barely see the form of Lazarus wrapped in linen bandages. While these earth creatures stood there in silence, a vast host of celestial beings had swung into their places waiting to answer the signal to action to be given by Gabriel, their commander.

Jesus lifted his eyes and said: [168:2.2] *Father, I am thankful that you heard and granted my request. I know that you always hear me, but because of those who stand here with me, I thus speak with you, that they may believe that you have sent me into the world and that they may know that you are working with me in that which we are about to do.* And when he had prayed, he cried out with a loud voice, “*Lazarus, come forth!*”

Although the humans didn’t make a move, the vast celestial host was all a stir in unified action in obedience to the Creator’s word. In just 12 seconds (according to The Urantia Book) of earth time, the hitherto lifeless body of Lazarus began to move and sat up on the edge of the stone shelf where it had rested. His body was bound about with grave clothes, and his face covered with a napkin. He stood up before them alive, and Jesus said, “*Loose him and let him go.*” [168:2.3]

All but the apostles, Mary and Martha, fled to the house. They were pale with fright and overcome with amazement, and while some stayed, many hurried to their homes. Lazarus, standing there, greeted Jesus and the apostles and asked the meaning of the grave clothes, and why he had awakened in the garden. Jesus and the apostles moved to one side, while Martha told Lazarus of his death, burial, and resurrection. She explained all that had happened to him.

Some may think this is a strange story, but if we had existed for billions of years as had some of those Higher Beings, what is there we wouldn’t be able to do? Some of those beings, who were present at Lazarus’ resurrection, no doubt helped to build the universe, that our scientists claim to be around 13.7 billion years old. Someone had to create it; there was no hocus-pocus! The universe was created according to the natural laws of higher dimensions.

What Became of Lazarus

Lazarus remained at his Bethany home, being the center of great interest to many sincere believers and numerous curious individuals, until the days of the crucifixion of Jesus, when he received warning that the Sanhedrin had decreed his death. The rulers of the Jews were determined to put a stop to the further spread of the teachings of Jesus, and they judged that it would be useless to put Jesus to death if they permitted Lazarus, who represented the very peak of Jesus’ wonder-working, to live and bear testimony to the fact that Jesus had raised him from the dead. Lazarus already had suffered bitter persecution from them. And so, Lazarus took hasty leave of his sisters at Bethany, and fled down through Jericho and across the Jordan, never permitting himself to rest long until he had reached Philadelphia. Lazarus knew Abner well, and here he felt safe from the murderous intrigues of the wicked Sanhedrin.

Soon after this Martha and Mary disposed of their lands at Bethany and joined their brother in Perea. Meantime, Lazarus had become the treasurer of the church at Philadelphia. He became a strong supporter of Abner in his controversy with Paul and the Jerusalem church and ultimately died, at 67 years old, of the same sickness that he died from as a young man when Jesus brought him back to life at Bethany.

When we make our transition, the same thing will happen to us that happened to Lazarus: he didn’t realize he had died until his sister told him and he resumed his life where he left off. The only difference is that we will be in another dimension with new bodies made of different material, we will continue living.

Chapter 12

The Last Days of Jesus

When the work of teaching the people did not command their attention, the custom of Jesus and the apostles were to rest from all activities on Wednesdays. On this specific Wednesday, they ate breakfast later than usual, and their camp filled with an all-consuming silence; they said little during the first half of breakfast. Jesus broke the silence by telling his apostles that he desired all of them to rest all day, to take time to reflect on all that had happened since they had come to Jerusalem, and to think about what lay ahead.

After breakfast, the Master informed the apostle Andrew who was the administrator of their group that he planned to be absent for the day and suggested that the apostles be permitted to spend time according to their desires; but under no circumstance were they to go into Jerusalem.

When Jesus prepared to go into the hills alone, David Zebedee, one of Jesus' close friends, approached him. David Zebedee told Jesus that he well knew that the Pharisees and rulers were out to destroy him, that as Jesus was preparing to go into the hills alone; he would send three armed men with Jesus to make sure he was safe. Jesus told David, *"You mean well, but you err in that you fail to understand that the Son of Man needs no one to defend him. No one will lay hands on me until that hour when I am ready to lay down my life in conformity to my Father's will. These men may not accompany me. I desire to go alone, that I may commune with the Father."* [177:0.2]

A teenager named John Mark was accustomed to stay at Jesus' camp and do errands for the group. John Mark walked up to Jesus with a basket of food and water and suggested that since he planned to be away all day, he might become hungry. Jesus smiled at the lad and reached for the basket. John held onto the basket saying, Master, you might stop to pray, forget and walk off and leave the basket; perhaps I can go along and guard the basket for you. A group of people looked in astonishment as the young man held onto the basket; Jesus looked at the boy and said: [177:1.2] *Since with all your heart you crave to go with me, it shall not be denied you. We will go off by ourselves and have a good visit. You may ask me any question that arises in your heart, and we will comfort and console each other. You may start out carrying the lunch, and when you grow weary, I will help you. Follow on with me.* Jesus was a kind and compassionate human being who did not turn away this youth who desired with all his heart to accompany him. And as they walked the path into the hills, Jesus assured John Mark that he would become a mighty messenger for the Kingdom of God.

Jesus did not return to camp that day until after sunset. He spent his last day of quiet on earth talking with this truth-seeking youth and communing with his Paradise Father. This event has become known in the higher worlds as the day the God of this universe (there are other universes, and scientists of today are on the verge of proving this) spent a day in the hills with a youth. This event forever exemplifies the willingness of the Creator of our universe to fellowship with his creation. We can be alone with Jesus out in nature or simply by contacting our higher mind.

Early Home Life

[177:2.1] *In the course of this day's visiting with John Mark, Jesus spent considerable time comparing their early childhood and later boyhood experiences. Although John's parents possessed more of this world's goods than had Jesus' parents, there was much experience in their boyhood which was very similar. Jesus said many things which helped John better to understand his parents and other members of his family. When the lad asked the Master how he could know that he would turn out to be a "mighty messenger of the kingdom," Jesus said:*

[177:2.2] *"I know you will prove loyal to the gospel of the kingdom because I can depend upon your present faith and love when these qualities are grounded upon such an early training as has been your portion at home. You are the product of a home where the parents bear each other a sincere affection, and therefore you have not been overloved so as injuriously to exalt your concept of self-importance. Neither has your personality suffered distortion in consequence of your parents' loveless maneuvering for your confidence and loyalty, the one against the other. You have enjoyed that parental love which ensures laudable self-confidence and which fosters normal feelings of security. But you have also been fortunate in that your parents possessed wisdom as well as love; and it was wisdom which led them to withhold most forms of indulgence and many luxuries which wealth can buy while they sent you to the synagogue school along with your neighborhood playfellows, and they also encouraged you to learn how to live in this world by permitting you to have original experience. You came over to the Jordan, where we preached and John's disciples baptized, with your young friend Amos. Both of you desired to go with us. When you returned to Jerusalem, your parents consented; Amos's parents refused; they loved their son so much that they denied him the blessed experience which you have had, even such as you this day enjoy. By running away from home, Amos could have joined us, but in so doing, he would have wounded love and sacrificed loyalty. Even if such a course had been wise, it would have been a terrible price to pay for experience, independence, and liberty. Wise parents, such as yours, see to it that their children do not have to wound love or stifle loyalty in order to develop independence and enjoy invigorating liberty when they have grown up to your age.*

[177:2.3] *"Love, John, is the supreme reality of the universe when bestowed by all-wise beings, but it is a dangerous and oftentimes semi-selfish trait as it is manifested in the experience of mortal parents. When you get married and have children of your own to rear, make sure that your love is admonished by wisdom and guided by intelligence."*

[177:2.4] *"Your young friend Amos believes this gospel of the kingdom just as much as you, but I cannot fully depend upon him; I am not certain about what he will do in the years to come. His early home life was not such as would produce a wholly dependable person. Amos is too much like one of the apostles who failed to enjoy a normal, loving, and wise home training. Your whole afterlife will be more happy and dependable because you spent your first eight years in a normal and well-regulated home. You possess a strong and well-knit character because you grew up in a home where love prevailed and wisdom reigned. Such childhood training produces a type of loyalty which assures me that you will go through with the course you have begun.*

The apostles spent most of their day walking about Mount Olivet visiting with disciples who were camping with them. Early in the afternoon, they became anxious to see Jesus as they were concerned about his safety, and they felt very lonely without him. There was much talk throughout the day as to whether or not Jesus should have been allowed to go off into the hills with just one young boy. Although no one said anything out loud, all but Judas wished they were in John Mark's place.

It was around mid-afternoon when Nathaniel gave a speech on "Supreme Desire" to about half of the apostles and many disciples. At the end of his speech, he talked about what was wrong with most of us: *"We are only halfhearted. We don't love the Master as much as he loves us. If we all wanted to go with him as much as John Mark did, he would have taken us. We stood around while the young lad offered the Master a basket of food and water. When the Master took hold of the basket, the lad wouldn't let go. And so the Master left us here while he went off into the hills with the basket, boy, and all.* [177:3.2]

Around four o'clock that afternoon, a runner came to David Zebedee bringing a message from his mother and Jesus' mother. Several days before that, David had become convinced that the chief priest and rulers were out to kill Jesus. He was sure Jesus would not use his divine power to save himself, nor would he permit his followers to use force to save him. After reaching these conclusions, David sent a messenger to his mother urging her to come to Jerusalem at once and to bring Jesus' mother and all their family with her.

David's mother did what was asked of her, and the runner came back to David and said his mother and Jesus' entire family were on their way to Jerusalem. David did all of this on his own. He thought he should keep it to himself and he told no one that Jesus' entire family were on their way to Jerusalem.

Judas and the Chief Priest

A short time after Jesus and John Mark left the camp; Judas Iscariot disappeared from camp, not returning until late that afternoon. Judas, confused and discontented, disobeyed the Master's request not to go to Jerusalem. He made haste to keep an appointment with Jesus' enemies at the home of Caiaphas, the Jewish high priest. It was an informal meeting that also included the Sanhedrin and was set for 10 o'clock that morning. This meeting was called to discuss the nature of the complaint which was filed against Jesus and the method to be used to bring him before the Roman authorities to get the necessary civil validation for the death sentence.

The day before, Judas had told some of his relatives and certain Sadducean friends of his father's family that he had concluded that Jesus was a well-meaning dreamer, and he was not the expected Messiah of the Jews. Judas told his family and friends that he was trying to find a graceful way to withdraw from the group. His friends convinced him that the Jewish rulers would praise his withdrawal as a great event. They made him believe he would receive high honors from the Sanhedrin, and he would be able to erase the stains of his association with untaught heathens.

Judas was convinced that the Jewish rulers would defeat Jesus and his group, and he didn't want to be identified with a movement that was crushed. Judas entertained the suggestion of one of his relatives that Jesus was a well-meaning fanatic but was probably not sound of mind. He always seemed to be a strange and misunderstood person.

Now Judas found himself being resentful that Jesus never assigned him to a job of more importance; although he appreciated being the Apostolic treasurer, he began to feel that he was not appreciated. He found himself overcome with anger towards Peter, James, and John because of their closeness to Jesus; and he was jealous. On the way to the high priest's home, he felt that this was his opportunity to get even with Peter, James, and John, and this concerned him more than the thought of betraying Jesus. Right then, a new idea came to his mind; that he could get even with those who had contributed to the greatest disappointment of his life. So, it must be plain to everyone that it was not for money that Judas was on his way to the high priest's home, to arrange for Jesus' betrayal; it was for revenge.

As he reached the home of Caiaphas, Judas arrived at his final decision to withdraw from Jesus and his fellow apostles. Having made up his mind to desert the cause of the Kingdom of Heaven, he was determined to gain for himself as much as possible that honor and glory he thought he'd have when he joined Jesus and his fellow apostles. All the apostles once shared this ambition for honor and glory with Judas, but as time went by, they learned to love truth and love Jesus, at least more than Judas did.

The betrayer was introduced to Caiaphas and the Jewish rulers by his cousin, who explained that Judas had discovered his mistake of allowing himself to be misguided by the subtle teachings of Jesus. And he had reached the decision that he wished to make public the announcement of this mistake and the renunciation of any connection with the Galilean. He asked for reinstatement in the confidence and fellowship of his Judean brethren. Judas' cousin went on to say that Judas felt it would be best for the peace of Israel if Jesus were taken into custody. And as evidence of his remorse for the mistake he had made by participating in such a group, he offered his service to the Sanhedrin in arresting Jesus peacefully. When his cousin finished speaking, he presented Judas. Stepping up to the high priest, Judas told them: "*All that my cousin promised, I will do.*" And he asked, "*But what are you willing to give me for my service?*" [177:4.7] Judas didn't notice the look of contempt on the face of the mighty and vainglorious Caiaphas; his heart was set on self-glory and craving for self-satisfaction.

Caiaphas, looking down on the betrayer, told Judas to go with the captain of the guard and arrange with this officer to bring in Jesus that night or tomorrow night. "*And he has been delivered by you into our hands, you shall receive your reward for this service.*" [177:4.8]

Judas left the home of the high priest and went with the captain of the temple guard to discuss Jesus' apprehension. Judas knew Jesus left camp early that day and had no idea when he would be back, so they arranged to arrest Jesus the following night.

Judas returned to the camp of Jesus late that afternoon, overjoyed with thoughts of grandeur and glory such as he hadn't had in many days. He realized that there would be no kingdom of heaven as he had conceived it. Judas didn't know it at the time, but he had been an unconscious critic of Jesus ever since Herod beheaded John the Baptist. Judas had always resented the fact that Jesus didn't save John. Judas had been a follower of John before joining up with Jesus. He was now saturated with jealousy and overcome with resentment.

It was the Wednesday evening social hour at camp, and the Master tried to cheer up his downhearted apostles, but that was just about impossible. They were beginning to sense that something awful was impending. They could not be cheerful, even when Jesus recalled memorable and loving experiences they had shared. Jesus asked about each of the apostles' families. Looking at David Zebedee, he wondered if anyone had heard from his mother and family recently. David looked down at his feet for he was afraid to answer.

Even Jesus' cheerfulness and unusual sociability frightened the apostles. They all sensed that something terrible lay just ahead and none felt prepared to face the test. Jesus had been away all day, and they had missed him greatly. This Wednesday evening marked their lowest spiritual state up to the actual hour of the Master's death. The morning would bring them one day closer to that awful Friday; still, Jesus was with them, and they passed through the hour more gracefully.

Just before midnight Jesus, knowing this would be the last night he would sleep through with his chosen family on earth, told them to go and rest. *"Go to your sleep, my brethren, and peace be upon you till we rise on the morrow, one more day to do the Father's will and experience the joy of knowing that we are his sons."* [177:5.6]

Jesus had planned to spend this Thursday, his last free day on earth as a divine Son incarnated in the flesh, with his apostles and a few of his devoted disciples. On this beautiful morning, soon after breakfast, Jesus led them to a secluded place not far from their camp and he taught them many new truths. Except for Judas, the twelve apostles were present. Peter and several others mentioned his absence; they assumed Jesus had sent him into the city to prepare for the celebration of the Passover. Judas did not return to the camp until mid-afternoon, a short time before Jesus led the twelve into Jerusalem for the Last Supper. At this gathering, among other things, Jesus said to the group:

[178:1.15] *This gospel of the kingdom is a living truth. I have told you it is like the leaven in the dough, like the grain of mustard seed; and now I declare that it is like the seed of the living being, which, from generation to generation, while it remains the same living seed, unfailingly unfolds itself in new manifestations and grows acceptably in channels of new adaptation to the peculiar needs and conditions of each successive generation. The revelation I have made to you is a **living revelation**, and I desire that it shall bear appropriate fruits in each individual and in each generation in accordance with the laws of spiritual growth, increase, and adaptative development. From generation to generation this gospel must show increasing vitality and exhibit greater depth of spiritual power. It must not be permitted to become merely a sacred memory, a mere tradition about me and the times in which we now live.*

Jesus was saying that our religion must evolve just like everything else in life. We can't keep hanging onto that old-time religion and expect to move forward. Over and over, you hear people crying out, "Help me, Lord." But their vibration prevents it; they are not making the truth connection. When Jesus concluded his teachings, it was about one o'clock in the afternoon, and when they returned, David and his group had prepared lunch for them.

After the Noontime Meal

[178:2.1] *Not many of the Master's hearers were able to take in even a part of his forenoon address. Of all who heard him, the Greeks comprehended most. Even the eleven apostles were bewildered by his allusions to future political kingdoms and to successive generations of kingdom believers. Jesus' most devoted followers could not reconcile the impending end of his earthly ministry with these references to an extended future of gospel activities. Some of these Jewish believers were beginning to sense that earth's greatest tragedy was about to take place, but they could not reconcile such an impending disaster with either the Master's cheerfully indifferent personal attitude or his forenoon discourse, wherein he repeatedly*

alluded to the future transactions of the heavenly kingdom, extending over vast stretches of time and embracing relations with many and successive temporal kingdoms on earth.

By the noontime meal, David Zebedee, through the work of his secret agents in Jerusalem, was fully advised concerning the plan to arrest and kill Jesus. David was aware of the part Judas had played in the scheme, but never disclosed this knowledge to any of the apostles or disciples. Shortly after lunch he did lead Jesus aside and asked Jesus if he knew—but he never got any further, because Jesus stopped him, saying: “Yes, David, I know all about it, and I know that you know, but see to it that you tell no man. Only doubt not in your own heart that the will of God will prevail in the end.” [178:2.3]

[178:2.4] *This conversation with David was interrupted by the arrival of a messenger from Philadelphia bringing word that Abner [Abner was a disciple of Jesus working from Philadelphia] had heard of the plot to kill Jesus and asking if he should depart for Jerusalem. This runner hastened off for Philadelphia with this word for Abner: “Go on with your work. If I depart from you in the flesh, it is only that I may return in the spirit. I will not forsake you. I will be with you to the end.”*

About this time Philip (one of Jesus' Apostles), approached Jesus and mentioned to him that the Passover was drawing near. [178:2.5] *“Where you would have us prepare for it?”* Jesus answered: *“Go and bring Peter and John, and I will give you directions concerning the supper we will eat together this night; as for the Passover that you will have to consider after we have first done this.”*

Judas saw Philip speaking about these things to Jesus, and he tried to get closer so he could hear their conversation, but David Zebedee, who was standing nearby, engaged Judas in a conversation while Peter, John, and Philip went to one side to speak with Jesus.

Jesus directed Peter, John and Philip to go right away to Jerusalem, and: *“As you enter the gate, you will meet with a man bearing a water pitcher. He will speak to you, and then shall you follow him. When he leads you to a certain house, go in after him and ask of the good man of that house, ‘Where is the guest chamber wherein the Master is to eat supper with his apostles?’ And when you have thus inquired, this householder will show you a large upper room all furnished and ready for us.”* [178:2.7]

The parents of John Mark provided this room for Jesus' last supper with his apostles, as a result of a conversation between Jesus and John Mark when they were alone in the hills. Jesus wanted to be sure he would have a last supper undisturbed with his apostles. He didn't wish Judas to know beforehand of their meeting place, and he was afraid Judas would alert his enemies to take him while they had their last meal. In this way, Judas did not learn of their place of meeting until later in the company of Jesus and the other apostles.

It was about four-thirty in the afternoon when the three apostles returned and informed Jesus that everything was ready for the supper. Right away, Jesus prepared to lead his twelve apostles over the trail to Bethany Road and on into Jerusalem; this was the last journey he ever made with all twelve of them.

On the Way to the Last Supper

After they had been on the road for a while, Jesus said to the twelve: [178:3.2] *Sit down and rest yourselves while I talk with you about what must shortly come to pass. All these years have I lived with you as brethren, and I have taught you the truth concerning the kingdom of heaven and have revealed to you the mysteries thereof. And my Father has indeed done many wonderful works in connection with my mission on earth. You have been witnesses of all this and partakers in the experience of being laborers together with God. And you will bear me witness that I have for some time warned you that I must presently return to the work the Father has given me to do; I have plainly told you that I must leave you in the world to carry on the work of the kingdom. It was for this purpose that I set you apart, in the hills of Capernaum. The experience you have had with me, you must now make ready to share with others. As the Father sent me into this world, so am I about to send you forth to represent me and finish the work I have begun.*

Beginning the Supper

After receiving a warm welcome from John Mark's parents into their home, the apostles went directly to the upper chamber where they were to eat their supper, and Jesus lingered behind to talk with

the Mark family. It was understood beforehand that Jesus wanted to celebrate this occasion alone with his apostles, so no servants were provided to wait upon them.

John Mark escorted the apostles to a large room which was furnished for supper, and they saw that everything was ready. This U-shaped table was surrounded by 13 reclining couches, just as the Passover would be celebrated in a wealthy Jewish home.

As the twelve entered the room they noticed just inside the door a pitcher, basin, and towels for washing their dusty feet; and since there was no servant provided to render this service, the apostles began to look at each other as soon as John Mark left the room, thinking to themselves, who's going to wash our feet? No one wanted to act as the servant.

As they stood debating in their hearts, they looked over the seating arrangements and noticed the higher couch of the host—one couch on the right and eleven arranged around the table on up to the second seat of honor on the host's left.

X Expecting Jesus to walk in at any moment, the apostles stood in a state of uncertainty, whether to sit down or wait for Jesus to assign their seats. As they hesitated, Judas stepped to the left seat of honor and indicated he would sit there as the preferred guest. The other apostles began a heated dispute. John Zebedee claimed the other seat of honor on the right. Simon Peter was irritated at Judas and John Zebedee for assuming the choice positions. As the other angry apostles looked on, he marched around the table and took his place on the lowest couch at the end of the seating order. Since others had taken the choice seats, Peter figured he would take the lowest position, hoping that when Jesus saw him in the lowest position, he would give him one of the places of honor. (All this goes to show the apostles were human.)

The apostles were engaged in voicing their annoyance when Jesus appeared in the doorway. He stood a moment and a look of disappointment appeared on his face. The apostles were ready to eat supper, save that their feet had not been washed, and they were not in a good frame of mind. When Jesus appeared, they were still making uncomplimentary remarks about each other. One would think that those who had been with Jesus for so many years would refrain from publicly expressing their feelings.

For a few minutes after Jesus took his seat not a word was spoken. He looked them over and finally relieved the tension with a smile, saying: [179:2.1] *"I have greatly desired to eat this Passover with you. I wanted to eat with you once more before I suffered, and realizing that my hour has come, I arranged to have this supper with you tonight, for, as concerns the morrow, we are all in the hands of the Father, whose will I have come to execute. I shall not again eat with you until you sit down with me in the kingdom which my Father will give me when I have finished that for which he sent me into this world."*

After the wine and water had been mixed, and Jesus received it from Thaddeus, he held it while he offered thanks, and when he finished he said: [179:2.2] *"Take this cup and divide it among yourselves and, when you partake of it, realize that I shall not again drink with you the fruit of the vine since this is our last supper. When we sit down again in this manner, it will be in the kingdom to come."*

Jesus began to talk to his apostles because he knew his time had come for him to return to the Father; his work on earth was almost finished. Jesus knew he had revealed the Father's love on earth and had shown the Father's mercy to humanity. And he had completed that which he had come into the world to do, defeating Lucifer and Satan and Caligastia, and receiving all power and authority in heaven and on earth. Jesus was aware that Judas Iscariot had conspired to deliver him into the hands of his enemies that night. He realized this traitorous betrayal was the work of Judas, but it pleased Caligastia (once the prince of this world), Lucifer and Satan. Jesus feared no one who sought his spiritual overthrow, no more than he feared those who sought his physical demise. The Master had one concern: that his followers would be safe.

Washing the Apostles' Feet

It was a Jewish custom at the Passover meal after drinking the first cup, for the host to arise from the table and wash his hands. Later in the meal, after the second cup, all the guests arose and washed their hands. The apostles knew that Jesus never observed these rites of ceremonial hand washing, so they were curious to know what he planned after the first cup. After the first cup, Jesus rose from the table and went to the water, pitchers, basins, and towels. The apostles' curiosity turned into amazement as they watched the Master remove his outer garment, put on an apron and pour water into a foot basin. Can you imagine

the astonishment of the twelve who so recently had refused to wash each other's feet and had unseemly disputed over their positions at the table? Jesus walked to the lowest seat of the feast and knelt to wash Simon's feet. As Jesus knelt, the twelve apostles rose to their feet as one. Even the traitorous Judas forgot himself for a moment to rise with his fellow apostles in their expression of surprise, respect, and amazement.

Peter stood looking down into the upturned face of his Master. Jesus said nothing; his actions said everything. Jesus so loved Peter, the Galilean fisherman who was the first human being who wholeheartedly believed in the divinity of Jesus and made a public confession of his belief.

[179:3.3] *After a few moments of this great embarrassment, Peter said, "Master, do you really mean to wash my feet?" And then, looking up into Peter's face, Jesus said: "You may not fully understand what I am about to do, but hereafter you will know the meaning of all these things." Then Simon Peter, drawing a long breath, said, "Master, you shall never wash my feet!" And each of the apostles nodded their approval of Peter's firm declaration of refusal to allow Jesus thus to humble himself before them.*

The dramatic demonstration of this unusual scene even touched the heart of Judas Iscariot; but when his vainglorious intellect passed judgment on the scene, he concluded that this gesture of humility conclusively proved that Jesus would never qualify as the Messiah, the deliverer of the Jews, and he made no mistake in deserting the Master's cause.

[197:3.5] *As they all stood there in breathless amazement, Jesus said: "Peter, I declare that, if I do not wash your feet, you will have no part with me in that which I am about to perform." When Peter heard this declaration, coupled with the fact that Jesus continued kneeling there at his feet, he made one of those decisions of blind acquiescence in compliance with the wish of one whom he respected and loved. As it began to dawn on Simon Peter that there was attached to this proposed enactment of service some signification that determined one's future connection with the Master's work, he not only became reconciled to the thought of allowing Jesus to wash his feet but, in his characteristic and impetuous manner, said: "Then, Master, wash not my feet only but also my hands and my head.*

Jesus went around the table in silence washing the feet of all twelve of his apostles, not even passing over Judas. When he had finished washing the feet of his apostles, he resumed his outer garment and went back to his place as host. After looking over his confused apostles, he said:

[179:3.8] *"Do you really understand what I have done to you? You call me Master, and you say well, for so I am. If, then, the Master has washed your feet, why was it that you were unwilling to wash one another's feet? What lesson should you learn from this parable in which the Master so willingly does that service which his brethren were unwilling to do for one another? Verily, verily, I say to you: A servant is not greater than his master; neither is one who is sent greater than he who sends him. You have seen the way of service in my life among you and blessed are you who will have the gracious courage so to serve. But why are you so slow to learn that the secret of greatness in the spiritual kingdom is not like the methods of power in the material world?*

[197:3.9] *When I came into this chamber tonight, you were not content proudly to refuse to wash one another's feet, but you must also fall to disputing among yourselves as to who should have the places of honor at my table. Such honors the Pharisees and the children of this world seek, but it should not be so among the ambassadors of the heavenly kingdom. Do you not know that there can be no place of preferment at my table? Do you not understand that I love each of you as I do the others? Do you not know that the place nearest me, as men regard such honors, can mean nothing concerning your standing in the kingdom of heaven? You know that the kings of the gentiles have lordship over their subjects, while those who exercise this authority are sometimes called benefactors. But it shall not be so in the kingdom of heaven. He who would be great among you, let him become as the younger; while he who would be chief, let him become as one who serves. Who is the greater, he who sits at meat, or he who serves? Is it not commonly regarded that he who sits at meat is the greater? But you will observe that I am among you as one who serves. If you are willing to become fellow servants with me in doing the Father's will, in the kingdom to come, you shall sit with me in power, still doing the Father's will in future glory.*

When Jesus stopped speaking, the Alpheus twins (two of Jesus' apostles who were twins) brought on the bread and wine with the bitter herbs and paste of dried fruits for the next course of the Last Supper.

Last Words to the Betrayer

For a while, the apostles ate in silence, but under Jesus' cheerful demeanor, they soon started a conversation; and before long, the meal was proceeding as though nothing had happened that would interfere with this special occasion. After some time had gone by, about midway through the second course of the meal, Jesus, looking them over, said. [179:4.1] *"I have told you how much I desired to have this supper with you, and knowing how the evil forces of darkness have conspired to bring about the death of the Son of Man, I determined to eat this supper with you in this secret chamber and a day in advance of the Passover since I will not be with you by this time tomorrow night. I have repeatedly told you that I must return to the Father. Now has my hour come, but it was not required that one of you should betray me into the hands of my enemies."*

[179:4.2] *When the twelve heard this, having already been robbed of much of their self-assertiveness and self-confidence by the parable of the feet washing and the Master's subsequent discourse, they began to look at one another while in disconcerted tones they hesitatingly inquired, "Is it I?" And when they had all so inquired, Jesus said: "While it is necessary that I go to the Father, it was not required that one of you should become a traitor to fulfill the Father's will. This is the coming to fruit of the concealed evil in the heart of one who failed to love the truth with his whole soul. How deceitful is the intellectual pride that precedes the spiritual downfall! My friend of many years, who even now eats my bread, will be willing to betray me, even as he now dips his hand with me in the dish."*

When Jesus finished speaking the apostles were curious and again asked, "Is it I?" After a few minutes, Judas, sitting on the left of Jesus, again asked, "Is it I?"

[179:4.6] *"When Jesus had thus spoken, leaning over toward Judas, he said: "What you have decided to do, do quickly." And when Judas heard these words, he arose from the table and hastily left the room, going out into the night to do what he had set his mind to accomplish. When the other apostles saw Judas hasten off after Jesus had spoken to him, they thought he had gone to procure something additional for the supper or to do some other errand for the Master since they supposed he still carried the bag."*

Establishing the Remembrance Supper

[197:5.1] *As they brought Jesus the third cup of wine, the "cup of blessing," he arose from the couch and, taking the cup in his hands, blessed it, saying: "Take this cup, all of you, and drink of it. This shall be the cup of my remembrance. This is the cup of the blessing of a new dispensation of grace and truth. This shall be to you the emblem of the bestowal and ministry of the divine Spirit of Truth. And I will not again drink this cup with you until I drink in new form with you in the Father's eternal kingdom."*

[179:5.2] *The apostles all sensed that something out of the ordinary was transpiring as they drank of this cup of blessing in profound reverence and perfect silence. The old Passover commemorated the emergence of their fathers from a state of racial slavery into individual freedom; now the Master was instituting a new remembrance supper as a symbol of the new dispensation wherein the enslaved individual emerges from the bondage of ceremonialism and selfishness into the spiritual joy of the brotherhood and fellowship of the liberated faith sons of the living God."*

In Gethsemane

It was about ten o'clock that Thursday night when Jesus and the eleven left the home of Elijah and Mary Mark on their way back to their Gethsemane camp. Since the day in the hills with Jesus, John Mark made it his business to keep a watchful eye on him. While Jesus and the apostles were eating in the upper room, John Mark slept for a couple of hours, which he needed; when he heard them coming downstairs, he got up and followed them to their camp adjacent to Gethsemane Park. John Mark remained close to the Master throughout the night, and the next day, he was a witness to everything on to the hour of his crucifixion.

As Jesus and the eleven apostles started walking on the path to Gethsemane, they wondered what was taking Judas so long. Then they started talking about Jesus' prediction about one of them betraying him. For the first time, they realized all was not well with Judas. But they didn't make open comments about

Judas until they reached the camp and saw that he was not there. They all asked Andrew, the chief apostle, where was Judas; he said he didn't know, but he suspected Judas had deserted them.

The Last Group Prayer

[182:1.1] *A few moments after arriving at camp, Jesus said to them: "My friends and brethren, my time with you is now very short, and I desire that we draw apart by ourselves while we pray to our Father in heaven for strength to sustain us in this hour and henceforth in all the work we must do in his name."*

[182:1.2] *When Jesus had thus spoken, he led the way a short distance up on Olivet, and in full view of Jerusalem he bade them kneel on a large flat rock in a circle about him as they had done on the day of their ordination; and then, as he stood there in the midst of them glorified in the mellow moonlight, he lifted up his eyes toward heaven and prayed:*

182:1.3] *"Father, my hour has come; now glorify your Son that the Son may glorify you. I know that you have given me full authority over all living creatures in my realm, and I will give eternal life to all who will become faith sons of God. And this is eternal life, that my creatures should know you as the only true God and Father of all, and that they should believe in him whom you sent into the world. Father, I have exalted you on earth and have accomplished the work which you gave me to do. I have almost finished my bestowal upon the children of our own creation; there remains only for me to lay down my life in the flesh. And now, O my Father, glorify me with the glory which I had with you before this world was and receive me once more at your right hand.*

[182:1.4] *"I have manifested you to the men whom you chose from the world and gave to me. They are yours — as all life is in your hands — you gave them to me, and I have lived among them, teaching them the way of life, and they have believed. These men are learning that all I have comes from you, and that the life I live in the flesh is to make known my Father to the worlds. The truth which you have given to me I have revealed to them. These, my friends and ambassadors, have sincerely willed to receive your word. I have told them that I came forth from you, that you sent me into this world, and that I am about to return to you. Father, I do pray for these chosen men. And I pray for them not as I would pray for the world, but as for those whom I have chosen out of the world to represent me to the world after I have returned to your work, even as I have represented you in this world during my sojourn in the flesh. These men are mine; you gave them to me; but all things which are mine are ever yours, and all that which was yours you have now caused to be mine. You have been exalted in me, and I now pray that I may be honored in these men. I can no longer be in this world; I am about to return to the work you have given me to do. I must leave these men behind to represent us and our kingdom among men. Father, keep these men faithful as I prepare to yield up my life in the flesh. Help these, my friends, to be one in spirit, even as we are one. As long as I could be with them, I could watch over them and guide them, but now am I about to go away. Be near them, Father, until we can send the new teacher to comfort and strengthen them.*

182:1.5] *"You gave me twelve men, and I have kept them all save one, the son of revenge, who would not have further fellowship with us. These men are weak and frail, but I know we can trust them; I have proved them; they love me, even as they reverence you. While they must suffer much for my sake, I desire that they should also be filled with the joy of the assurance of sonship in the heavenly kingdom. I have given these men your word and have taught them the truth. The world may hate them, even as it has hated me, but I do not ask that you take them out of the world, only that you keep them from the evil in the world. Sanctify them in the truth; your word is truth. And as you sent me into this world, even so am I about to send these men into the world. For their sakes, I have lived among men and have consecrated my life to your service that I might inspire them to be purified through the truth I have taught them and the love I have revealed to them. I well know, my Father, that there is no need for me to ask you to watch over these brethren after I have gone; I know you love them even as I, but I do this that they may the better realize the Father loves mortal men even as does the Son.*

[182:1.6] *"And now, my Father, I would pray not only for these eleven men but also for all others who now believe, or who may hereafter believe the gospel of the kingdom through the word of their future ministry. I want them all to be one, even as you and I are one. You are in me and I am in you, and I desire that these believers likewise be in us; that both of our spirits indwell them. If my children are one as we*

are one, and if they love one another as I have loved them, all men will then believe that I came forth from you and be willing to receive the revelation of truth and glory which I have made. The glory which you gave me I have revealed to these believers. As you have lived with me in spirit, so have I lived with them in the flesh. As you have been one with me, so have I been one with them, and so will the new teacher ever be one with them and in them. And all this have I done that my brethren in the flesh may know that the Father loves them even as does the Son, and that you love them even as you love me. Father, work with me to save these believers that they may presently come to be with me in glory and then go on to join you in the Paradise embrace. Those who serve with me in humiliation, I would have with me in glory so that they may see all you have given into my hands as the eternal harvest of the seed sowing of time in the likeness of mortal flesh. I long to show my earthly brethren the glory I had with you before the founding of this world. This world knows very little of you, righteous Father, but I know you, and I have made you known to these believers, and they will make known your name to other generations. And now I promise them that you will be with them in the world even as you have been with me — even so.”

Alone in Gethsemane

After things were still and quiet about the camp, Jesus taking Peter, James and John, went a short way up a nearby gorge where he had often gone to commune with God. The three apostles couldn't help but recognize that Jesus was much oppressed. They had never seen him so depressed. When they arrived at the place where Jesus liked to pray, he told the three to sit down and watch with him while he walked about a stone's throw away to pray. He fell on his face and prayed: [182:3.1] *“My Father, I came into this world to do your will, and so have I. I know that the hour has come to lay down this life in the flesh, and I do not shrink therefrom, but I would know that it is your will that I drink this cup. Send me the assurance that I will please you in my death even as I have in my life.”*

Jesus remained in prayer for a few moments, then going to the three apostles, he found they were sound asleep; their eyes were heavy, and they could not remain awake. Jesus awoke them and said:[182:3.2] *“What! Can you not watch with me even for one hour? Cannot you see that my soul is exceedingly sorrowful, even to death, and that I crave your companionship?” After the three had aroused from their slumber, the Master again went apart by himself and, falling down on the ground, again prayed: “Father, I know it is possible to avoid this cup — all things are possible with you — but I have come to do your will, and while this is a bitter cup, I would drink it if it is your will.” And when he had thus prayed, a mighty angel came down by his side and, speaking to him, touched him and strengthened him.*

[182:3.3] *When Jesus returned to speak with the three apostles, he again found them fast asleep. He awakened them, saying: “In such an hour I need that you should watch and pray with me — all the more do you need to pray that you enter not into temptation — wherefore do you fall asleep when I leave you?”*

[182:3.4] *And then, for a third time, the Master withdrew and prayed: “Father, you see my sleeping apostles; have mercy upon them. The spirit is indeed willing, but the flesh is weak. And now, O Father, if this cup may not pass, then would I drink it. Not my will, but yours, be done.” And when he had finished praying, he lay for a moment prostrate on the ground. When he arose and went back to his apostles, once more he found them asleep. He surveyed them and, with a pitying gesture, tenderly said: “Sleep on now and take your rest; the time of decision is past. The hour is now upon us wherein the Son of Man will be betrayed into the hands of his enemies.” As he reached down to shake them that he might awaken them, he said: “Arise, let us be going back to the camp, for, behold, he who betrays me is at hand, and the hour has come when my flock shall be scattered. But I have already told you about these things.”*

The Betrayer and the Arrest of Jesus

After Jesus had finally awakened Peter, James, and John, he suggested they go to their tents and get some sleep, so that they would be ready for the next day's duties. But now the three were wide awake as they had rested during their short naps. They were excited by the arrival of two messengers who had entered the camp and asked for David Zebedee. Peter told them where he was keeping watch.

Although the eight apostles were sound asleep, the Greeks camped next to them were so fearful of trouble they had posted a sentinel to give the alarm in case of danger. When the two messengers entered the camp, the Greek sentinel woke up all his countrymen and they ran from their tents entirely dressed and armed. All the camp was now awake except the eight apostles. Peter was going to wake them, but Jesus forbade him. Jesus suggested they go to their tents, but they were reluctant to go. Jesus left his followers and walked down to the Olive Press, near the entrance to Gethsemane Park. The three apostles, the Greeks, and others member of the camp followed him; but John Mark went another way through olive trees and hid in a small shed near the olive press.

Jesus left the camp so when the soldiers came to arrest him, they wouldn't disturb his apostles. He was afraid that if the apostles were awakened at the time of his arrest, seeing Judas betray him would infuriate the apostles and they would resist the soldiers, be arrested with him, and share his fate.

Jesus knew the plans for his death originated in the councils of the rulers of the Jews; he was also aware that these evil doings had the full approval of Lucifer, Caligastia (the one Jesus called the prince of this world in John 12:31) and Satan. He also was aware that they wanted to see all of the apostles destroyed with him. So, Jesus sat alone on the olive press where no one attended him but John Mark and a host of celestial beings.

The Father's Will

[183:1.1] *There is great danger of misunderstanding the meaning of numerous sayings and many events associated with the termination of the Master's career in the flesh. The cruel treatment of Jesus by the ignorant servants and the calloused soldiers, the unfair conduct of his trials, and the unfeeling attitude of the professed religious leaders, must not be confused with the fact that Jesus, in patiently submitting to all this suffering and humiliation, was truly doing the will of the Father in Paradise. It was, indeed and in truth, the will of the Father that his Son should drink to the full the cup of mortal experience, from birth to death, but the Father in heaven had nothing whatever to do with instigating the barbarous behavior of those supposedly civilized human beings who so brutally tortured the Master and so horribly heaped successive indignities upon his nonresisting person. These inhuman and shocking experiences which Jesus was called upon to endure in the final hours of his mortal life were not in any sense a part of the divine will of the Father, which his human nature had so triumphantly pledged to carry out at the time of the final surrender of man to God as signified in the threefold prayer which he indited in the garden while his weary apostles slept the sleep of physical exhaustion.*

183:1.2] *The Father in heaven desired the bestowal Son to finish his earth career **naturally**, just as all mortals must finish up their lives on earth and in the flesh. Ordinary men and women cannot expect to have their last hours on earth and the supervening episode of death made easy by a special dispensation. Accordingly, Jesus elected to lay down his life in the flesh in the manner which was in keeping with the outworking of natural events, and he steadfastly refused to extricate himself from the cruel clutches of a wicked conspiracy of inhuman events which swept on with horrible certainty toward his unbelievable humiliation and ignominious death. And every bit of all this astounding manifestation of hatred and this unprecedented demonstration of cruelty was the work of evil men and wicked mortals. God in heaven did not will it, neither did the archenemies of Jesus dictate it, though they did much to ensure that unthinking and evil mortals would thus reject the bestowal Son. Even the father of sin turned his face away from the excruciating horror of the scene of the crucifixion.*

After Judas abruptly left the table while eating the Last Supper, he went directly to the home of his cousin. Then the two of them went straight to the captain of the temple guards. Judas asked the captain of the guards to prepare his temple guards as he was ready to lead them to Jesus. Judas appeared earlier than expected, so there was some delay starting off to the Mark home where Judas expected to find Jesus and

his eleven apostles. The Master and his apostles had left the Mark home fifteen minutes before Judas and the guards arrived. By the time the betrayer and the guards reached the Mark home, Jesus and the eleven were well outside the wall of the city and on their way back to their camp.

Judas was very disturbed at their failure to find Jesus at the Mark home and in the company of the eleven apostles; only two of them were armed for resistance. Judas knew that only Peter and Simon Zelotes were armed with swords. Judas hoped to take Jesus while the city was quiet and there was little chance of resistance. Judas feared that if they waited until Jesus and the apostles returned to their camp, more than sixty devoted disciples would be there, and Judas knew that Simon Zelotes had access to stored arms.

As he thought about how the other apostles would detest him, Judas became very nervous and feared they would try to kill him. He was not only disloyal but also a real coward. When they failed to find Jesus in the upper room, Judas asked the captain of the guard to return to the temple. By this time, the rulers of the Jews the Sanhedrin and Pharisees had started to gather at the high priest's home to prepare to receive Jesus. Their bargain with the traitor called for Jesus to be arrested by midnight of that day.

Judas explained to his associates that they had missed Jesus at the Mark home, and it would be necessary for them to go to Gethsemane to arrest him. The betrayer went on to say there were sixty devoted followers of Jesus at the camp and all were armed. The rulers of the Jews reminded Judas that Jesus always preached nonviolence; Judas replied they could not rely on all of Jesus' followers to be nonviolent. He genuinely feared for his hide and asked for a company of forty soldiers. The Jewish authorities did not have such a force under their power, so they went at once to the fortress of Antonia and asked the Roman commander for these soldiers. But when Antonia learned that they intended to arrest Jesus, he refused and referred them to his superior. They finally had to go to Pontius Pilate.

It was late when they arrived at Pilate's house, and Pilate had retired for the night to his chambers with his wife. At first, he hesitated to have anything to do with the arrest of Jesus since his wife had asked him not to grant the request. But since the presiding officer of the Jewish Sanhedrin was present, the governor thought it wise to grant the request.

Judas set out around 11:30 pm with about sixty people accompanying him: temple guards, Roman soldiers and curious servants of the chief priest and rulers. This group carrying torches and lanterns approached Gethsemane garden. Judas walked well in front of the group so that he could identify Jesus quickly and the apprehenders could promptly arrest him before Jesus' followers could rally to his defense. Another reason Judas decided to arrive at the garden before the soldiers was that he wanted it to appear he preceded the soldiers to warn Jesus and the apostles. But his scheming didn't work; although Jesus greeted Judas with kindness, he greeted him as a traitor.

As soon as Peter, James, and John, with about 30 of the campers, saw the armed band with torches and lanterns swing around the bottom of the hill, they knew soldiers were coming to arrest Jesus, and they all ran down to the olive press where Jesus was sitting alone in the moonlight. As the company of soldiers approached on one side, the three apostles approached on the other side. Judas stepped forward and stood in front of Jesus; the two groups stood motionless. Jesus was in between the two groups, and Judas was getting ready to place the traitorous kiss upon Jesus' brow.

After leading the soldiers to Gethsemane, Judas wished he could point Jesus out to the soldiers, or at most carry out his promise to greet him with a kiss, then quickly leave the scene. Judas was afraid all the present apostles would attack him for betraying their beloved teacher. But when the Master Jesus greeted him as a traitor, Judas was so confused and did not attempt to flee.

Jesus made one last effort to save Judas before the traitor betrayed him; before Judas could reach him, Jesus called out to the soldiers on his left saying to the captain, [183:3.4] *"Whom do you seek?" The captain answered, "Jesus of Nazareth. The Jesus stepped up immediately in front of the officer and, standing there in the calm majesty of the God of all this creation, said "I am he." Many of these soldiers and guards had heard Jesus teach in the temple, and others had heard about his great works. When they heard him bravely announce his identity, those in the front rank suddenly fell backward. They were awed and surprised at his calm and splendid announcement of his identity. There was no need for Judas to carry out his betrayal. Jesus had boldly presented himself to his enemies, and they could take him without Judas' help. But the traitor had to account for his presence there, and he wanted to keep his bargain with the rulers*

of the Jews. He wanted to receive his great reward and the honor he thought would be given to him in payment for his promise to deliver Jesus into their hands.

As the soldiers regrouped themselves from the dominant impression of Jesus' presence and the sound of his unusual voice, Judas walked up to Jesus, placed a kiss upon his brow, and said: [183:3.5] *"Hail Master and Teacher. And as Judas thus embraced his Master, Jesus said: "Friend, is it not enough to do this! Would you even betray the Son of Man with a kiss?"*

The apostles and disciples were shocked at what they had seen. For a moment, no one moved. Then Jesus freed himself from the traitor's grip and stepped up to the guards and soldiers and again asked: [183:3.6] *"Who do you seek?" And again the captain said, "Jesus of Nazareth." And again answered Jesus: "I have told you that I am he. If, therefore, you seek me, let these others go their way. I am ready to go with you."* The captain was willing to let the three apostles and their associates go their way in peace.

But before they started, as Jesus stood waiting for the captain's orders, one of the bodyguards of the high priest named Malchus stepped up to Jesus and was ready to bind Jesus' hands behind him; the Roman captain had told no one to bind Jesus. When Peter and the remainder of Jesus' followers saw their Master being subjected to such humiliation, they were no longer able to restrain themselves. Peter drew his sword and with the others rushed forward to strike Malchus. But before the soldiers could come to the defense of the high priest servant, Jesus raised a forbidding hand and speaking sternly, said: [183:3.7] *"Peter, put up your sword. They who take the sword shall perish by the sword. Do you not understand that it is the Father's will that I drink this cup? And do you not further know that I could even now command more than twelve legions of angels and their associates, who would deliver me from the hands of these few men?"*

Thus Jesus put a stop to physical resistance by his followers. However, their display of resistance aroused the fear of the captain of the soldiers who quickly bound Jesus.

After Jesus was bound, the captain, fearing Jesus' followers would try to rescue him, gave orders to seize Jesus' followers; but the soldiers were not quick enough. Peter and his associates overheard the captain's orders to arrest them, and they quickly ran back into the ravine. During this time, John Mark remained hidden in a nearby shed. When the guards started back to Jerusalem with Jesus, John Mark attempted to sneak out of the shed to catch up with the apostles and disciples. But just as he emerged from the shed, a last returning soldier who had run after the disciples saw John Mark come out of the shed and chased him.

The soldier got close enough to grab John Mark's coat, but the young man shrugged off the coat and ran naked, leaving the soldier with the empty coat. John Mark caught up with David Zebedee on the upper trail. When he told all that had happened, they both hurried back to the tents of the sleeping apostles and informed them of the Master's betrayal and arrest. At about the same time the eight apostles were being awakened, those who had fled up the ravine were returning. They all gathered by the olive press to discuss what could be done about Jesus' arrest. They were all confused, as it was difficult for them to believe this was happening. While this was going on, Peter and John Zebedee, who had hidden among the olive trees, had already gone after the soldiers and guards who were now leading Jesus back to Jerusalem as though he were a dangerous criminal. John followed close behind the group, but Peter kept his distance.

After John Mark escaped from the soldier, he went into Peter and John Zebedee's tent and found a coat for himself. He suspected they would take Jesus to the home of Annas, the former high priest, so he skirted the olive orchard and arrived ahead of the soldiers, hiding near the entrance to the gate of the high priest's palace.

On the Way to the High Priest's Palace

Before they left the garden with Jesus, a dispute broke out between the captain of the Jewish guard and the captain of the Roman soldiers about where to take Jesus. The captain of the temple guard gave orders to take him to Caiaphas, the acting high priest. The captain of the Roman soldiers gave orders that Jesus should be taken to the palace of Annas, the former high priest, and father-in-law of Caiaphas. And he ordered this because the Romans were accustomed to deal with Annas in all matters of enforcement of Jewish ecclesiastical laws. The orders of the Roman captain were obeyed, and they took Jesus to the home of Annas for examination. Judas marched alongside the captains hearing everything that was said but took

no part in the dispute. Neither the Jewish captain nor the Roman captain would speak to the betrayer as they held him in such contempt.

At about this time, John Zebedee recalled the Master telling him to remain always near at hand, and he hurried up to be near Jesus as he marched between the two captains. The commander of the temple guard saw him come up alongside and told his assistant to arrest John, that he was one of this fellow's followers. But when the Roman captain heard this, he looked up and saw John; and he gave orders that the apostle should come over to him. Then the Roman captain said to the Jewish captain: [183:5.3] *"This man is neither a traitor nor a coward. I saw him in the garden, and he did not draw a sword to resist us. He has the courage to come forward to be with his Master, and no man shall lay hands on him. The Roman law allows that any prisoner may have at least one friend to stand with him before the judgment bar, and this man will not be prevented from standing by the side of his Master, the prisoner."*

The Jews were afraid to say anything to John Zebedee or to harm him in any way because he had acquired something like the status of a Roman counselor selected to act as an observer of the transactions of the Jewish ecclesiastical court. This explains why John Zebedee was allowed to accompany Jesus throughout his whole ordeal.

When Judas heard this, he was so humiliated and ashamed that he dropped back behind the group arriving at the palace of Annas. John's situation became even more secure when, turning Jesus over to the captain of the temple guards at the gate of Annas' palace, the Roman captain told his assistant to go along with this prisoner and see that the Jews did not kill him without Pilate's consent. And he told his assistant to see that the Galilean was permitted to stand by and observe everything taking place. So, John was able to be near Jesus right up to his death on the cross, while the other ten apostles remained in hiding.

From the time of his arrest to the time of his appearance before Annas, Jesus said nothing.

Examination by Annas

Men appointed by Annas had secretly instructed the captain of the Roman soldiers to take Jesus right away to the palace of Annas after his arrest. The former high priest wanted to maintain his prestige as the chief ecclesiastical authority of the Jews. The other reason Annas wanted to keep Jesus at his house for several hours was to allow time to call the court of the Sanhedrin into session as it was not lawful to convene the Sanhedrin court before the time of the offering of the morning sacrifice in the temple. And the sacrifice was offered around three o'clock in the morning.

Annas knew that a court was waiting at the palace of his son-in-law, Caiaphas. Thirty members of the Sanhedrin court waited at the home of the high priest, ready to sit in judgment of Jesus when he was brought before them.

Annas, made rich by temple revenues, his son-in-law the acting high priest, and his relations with the Roman authorities, was the most powerful single person in all Jewry.

[184:1.2] *Annas had not seen Jesus for several years, not since the time when the Master called at his house and immediately left upon observing his coldness and reserve in receiving him. Annas had thought to presume on this early acquaintance and thereby attempt to persuade Jesus to abandon his claims and leave Palestine. He was reluctant to participate in the murder of a good man and had reasoned that Jesus might choose to leave the country rather than to suffer death. But when Annas stood before the stalwart and determined Galilean, he knew at once that it would be useless to make such proposals. Jesus was even more majestic and well poised than Annas remembered him.*

[184:1.3] *When Jesus was young, Annas had taken a great interest in him, but now his revenues were threatened by what Jesus had so recently done in driving the money-changers and other commercial traders out of the temple. This act had aroused the enmity of the former high priest far more than had Jesus' teachings.*

[184:1.4] *Annas entered his spacious audience chamber, seated himself in a large chair, and commanded that Jesus be brought before him. After a few moments spent in silently surveying the Master, he said: "You realize that something must be done about your teaching since you are disturbing the peace and order of our country." As Annas looked inquiringly at Jesus, the Master looked full into his eyes but*

made no reply. Again Annas spoke, "What are the names of your disciples, besides Simon Zelotes, the agitator?" Again Jesus looked down upon him, but he did not answer.

[184:1.5] Annas was considerably disturbed by Jesus' refusal to answer his questions, so much so that he said to him: "Do you have no care as to whether I am friendly to you or not? Do you have no regard for the power I have in determining the issues of your coming trial?" When Jesus heard this, he said: "Annas, you know that you could have no power over me unless it were permitted by my Father. Some would destroy the Son of Man because they are ignorant; they know no better, but you, friend, know what you are doing. How can you, therefore, reject the light of God?"

184:1.6] The kindly manner in which Jesus spoke to Annas almost bewildered him. But he had already determined in his mind that Jesus must either leave Palestine or die; so he summoned up his courage and asked: "Just what is it you are trying to teach the people? What do you claim to be?" Jesus answered: "You know full well that I have spoken openly to the world. I have taught in the synagogues and many times in the temple, where all the Jews and many of the gentiles have heard me. In secret I have spoken nothing; why, then, do you ask me about my teaching? Why do you not summon those who have heard me and inquire of them? Behold, all Jerusalem has heard that which I have spoken even if you have not yourself heard these teachings." But before Annas could make reply, the chief steward of the palace, who was standing near, struck Jesus in the face with his hand, saying, "How dare you answer the high priest with such words?" Annas spoke no words of rebuke to his steward, but Jesus addressed him, saying, "My friend, if I have spoken evil, bear witness against the evil; but if I have spoken the truth, why, then, should you smite me?"

[184:1.7] Although Annas regretted that his steward had struck Jesus, he was too proud to take notice of the matter. In his confusion he went into another room, leaving Jesus alone with the household attendants and the temple guards for almost an hour.

[184:1.8] When he returned, going up to the Master's side, he said, "Do you claim to be the Messiah, the deliverer of Israel?" Said Jesus: "Annas, you have known me from the times of my youth. You know that I claim to be nothing except that which my Father has appointed, and that I have been sent to all men, gentile as well as Jew." Then said Annas: "I have been told that you have claimed to be the Messiah; is that true?" Jesus looked upon Annas but only replied, "So you have said."

[184:1.9] About this time messengers arrived from the palace of Caiaphas to inquire what time Jesus would be brought before the court of the Sanhedrin, and since it was nearing the break of day, Annas thought best to send Jesus bound and in the custody of the temple guards to Caiaphas. He himself followed after them shortly.

I wonder what our lives would be like today if Jesus had chosen to leave Palestine. But Jesus was determined to do God's will by dying and proving to us that life is a continuum, although in another dimension after death. Jesus told us in John 18:36, "My kingdom is not of this world." He was trying to teach that there are other worlds.

Peter in the Courtyard

As the group of soldiers and guards came to the entrance of the palace of Annas, John Zebedee was marching by the side of the captain of the Roman soldiers. Judas had dropped some distance behind and Simon Peter even further back. After John had reached the palace courtyard with Jesus and the guards, Judas came up to the gate; but after seeing John and Jesus, Judas went to the home of Caiaphas, where the real trial of Jesus was to take place.

Soon after Judas left, Simon Peter arrived. As he stood by the gate, John noticed him just as they were getting ready to take Jesus into the palace. The gatekeeper knew John, and when he spoke to her to let Peter in, she gladly obliged. The night was chilly, so after he entered the courtyard Peter went over and warmed himself by the charcoal fire. Peter felt out of place among the enemies of Jesus, and he was out of place. Jesus had not told him to keep close at hand as he had told John. Peter should have been with the other apostles, who had been warned not to endanger their lives during the trial and crucifixion of Jesus. Peter had thrown aside his sword a short time before reaching the palace gate. He was baffled and could not believe Jesus had been arrested, and he had a difficult time grasping the reality of the situation that he

was there in the courtyard of Annas the high priest, warming himself among the servants of the high priest. He wondered what the other apostles were doing.

Shortly after the portress of the gate admitted Peter, and while he was warming himself near the fire, she went to him and asked if he wasn't one of that man's disciples? Peter thought of saving himself and quickly denied that he was. During the next couple of hours, two more people asked him the same question, and he vehemently denied knowing Jesus. The third time he denied the association, the cock crowed; then Peter remembered the words of the Master earlier that night that he would deny him three times before the cock crowed. As he stood there feeling guilty, the palace doors opened, and the guard led Jesus to the palace of Caiaphas. As Jesus passed by Peter, he saw by the light of the torches a look of despair on the face of his formerly confident and brave apostle; and he turned and looked upon Peter. [184:2.8] *Peter never forgot that look as long as he lived. It was such a glance of commingled pity and love as mortal man had never beheld in the face of the Master.*”

After Jesus and the guard had left the palace gate, Peter followed them for a while, but he could not go any further. He sat down by the side of the road and what seemed to be a river of water ran from his eyes. After he had shed the tears of anguish, he returned to the camp, hoping to find his brother Andrew. When he reached the camp, he saw only David Zebedee, who sent a messenger with Peter to show him where his brother was hiding in Jerusalem.

Before the Sanhedrin Court

It was 3:30 that Friday morning when the chief priest, Caiaphas, called the Sanhedrin court of inquiry into session and asked that Jesus be brought in for the proceedings. On three different occasions the Sanhedrin, by a significant majority vote, had already sentenced Jesus to death. They had decided he was worthy of death on informal charges of lawbreaking, blasphemy, and flouting the traditions of the fathers of Israel.

Usually, the Jews, when trying a man on capital charges, proceeded with great caution and provided every safeguard of fairness in the selection of witnesses and the entire conduct of the trial. However, on this occasion, Caiaphas acted more as a prosecutor than an unbiased judge.

Jesus appeared before the court clothed in his usual garments with his hands tied behind his back. The entire court was surprised and confused by his majestic appearance. Never had they looked upon such a prisoner nor seen such composure in a man on trial for his life.

[184:3.6] *The Jewish law required that at least two witnesses must agree upon any point before a charge could be laid against the prisoner. Judas could not be used as a witness against Jesus because the Jewish law specifically forbade the testimony of a traitor. More than a score of false witnesses were on hand to testify against Jesus, but their testimony was so contradictory and so evidently trumped up that the Sanhedrists themselves were very much ashamed of the performance. Jesus stood there, looking down benignly upon these perjurers, and his very countenance disconcerted the lying witnesses. Throughout all this false testimony, the Master never said a word; he made no reply to their many false accusations.*

[184:3.7] *The first time any two of their witnesses approached even the semblance of an agreement was when two men testified that they had heard Jesus say in the course of one of his temple discourses that he would “destroy this temple made with hands and in three days make another temple without hands.” That was not exactly what Jesus said, regardless of the fact that he pointed to his own body when he made the remark referred to.*

[184:3.8] *Although the high priest shouted at Jesus, “Do you not answer any of these charges?” Jesus opened not his mouth. He stood there in silence while all of these false witnesses gave their testimony. Hatred, fanaticism, and unscrupulous exaggeration so characterized the words of these perjurers that their testimony fell in its own entanglements. The very best refutation of their false accusations was the Master’s calm and majestic silence.*

[184:3.9] *Shortly after the beginning of the testimony of the false witnesses, Annas arrived and took his seat beside Caiaphas. Annas now arose and argued that this threat of Jesus to destroy the temple was sufficient to warrant three charges against him:*

[184:3.10] 1. *That he was a dangerous traducer of the people. That he taught them impossible things and otherwise deceived them.*

[184:3.11] 2. *That he was a fanatical revolutionist in that he advocated laying violent hands on the sacred temple, else how could he destroy it?*

[184:3.12] 3. *That he taught magic inasmuch as he promised to build a new temple, and that without hands.*

[184:3.13] *Already had the full Sanhedrin agreed that Jesus was guilty of death-deserving transgressions of the Jewish laws, but they were now more concerned with developing charges regarding his conduct and teachings which would justify Pilate in pronouncing the death sentence upon their prisoner. They knew that they must secure the consent of the Roman governor before Jesus could legally be put to death. And Annas was minded to proceed along the line of making it appear that Jesus was a dangerous teacher to be abroad among the people.*

[184:3.14] *But Caiaphas could no longer endure the sight of the Master standing there in perfect composure and unbroken silence. He thought he knew at least one way in which the prisoner might be induced to speak. Accordingly, he rushed over to the side of Jesus and, shaking his accusing finger in the Master's face, said: "I adjure you, in the name of the living God, that you tell us whether you are the Deliverer, the Son of God." Jesus answered Caiaphas: "I am. Soon I go to the Father, and presently shall the Son of Man be clothed with power and once more reign over the hosts of heaven."*

[184:3.15] *When the high priest heard Jesus utter these words, he was exceedingly angry, and rending his outer garments, he exclaimed: "What further need have we of witnesses? Behold, now have you all heard this man's blasphemy. What do you now think should be done with this lawbreaker and blasphemer?" And they all answered in unison, "He is worthy of death; let him be crucified."*

[184:3.16] *Jesus manifested no interest in any question asked him when before Annas or the Sanhedrists except the one question relative to his bestowal mission. When asked if he were the Son of God, he instantly and unequivocally answered in the affirmative.*

[184:3.17] *Annas desired that the trial proceed further and that charges of a definite nature regarding Jesus' relation to the Roman law and Roman institutions be formulated for subsequent presentation to Pilate. The councilors were anxious to carry these matters to a speedy termination, not only because it was the preparation day for the Passover and no secular work should be done afternoon, but also because they feared Pilate might any time return to the Roman capital of Judea, Caesarea, since he was in Jerusalem only for the Passover celebration.*

[184:3 18] *But Annas did not succeed in keeping control of the court. After Jesus had so unexpectedly answered Caiaphas, the high priest stepped forward and smote him in the face with his hand. Annas was truly shocked as the other members of the court, in passing out of the room, spit in Jesus' face, and many of them mockingly slapped him with the palms of their hands. And thus in disorder and with such unheard-of confusion this first session of the Sanhedrists trial of Jesus ended at half-past four o'clock.*

[184:3.19] *Thirty prejudiced and tradition-blinded false judges, with their false witnesses, are presuming to sit in judgment on the righteous Creator of a universe. And these impassioned accusers are exasperated by the majestic silence and superb bearing of this God-man. His silence is terrible to endure; his speech is fearlessly defiant. He is unmoved by their threats and undaunted by their assaults. Man sits in judgment on God, but even then he loves them and would save them if he could."*

The Hour of Humiliation

The Jewish law necessitated that in passing a death sentence, there should be two sessions of the court. The second session was to be held on the next day, and the members of the court were to spend the time in between fasting and mourning. These men could not wait until the next day to confirm their decision that Jesus must die. They waited only one hour. Jesus was left in the audience chamber in the care of the temple guards who, with servants of the high priest, amused themselves by doing terrible things to Jesus: striking him in the face with a rod, spitting on him, other indignities--and then asking him to prophesy. For a whole hour these guards and servants mistreated this unresisting man of Galilee.

During this awful hour of suffering and mock trial before these ignorant and non-feeling guards and servants, John Zebedee waited in lonely terror in an adjoining room. When this abuse started, Jesus indicated to John by nodding his head he should go into another room. Jesus knew that if his apostle stayed in the room to see this abusive treatment, John's protests would probably result in his death.

Second Meeting of the Court

At 5:30 that morning, the court reassembled, and Jesus was brought into the adjoining room where John was waiting. Here, Roman soldiers and temple guards watched over Jesus while the court began assembling the charges to be presented to Pilate.

[184:5.2] *"This session of the court lasted only a half hour, and when they adjourned to go before Pilate, they had drawn up the indictment of Jesus, as being worthy of death, under three heads:*

[184:5.3] *1. That he was a perverter of the Jewish nation; he deceived the people and incited them to rebellion.*

[184:5.4] *2. That he taught the people to refuse to pay tribute to Caesar.*

[184:5.5] *3. That, by claiming to be a king and the founder of a new sort of kingdom, he incited treason against the emperor.*

[184:5.6] *This entire procedure was irregular and wholly contrary to the Jewish laws. No two witnesses had agreed on any matter except those who testified regarding Jesus' statement about destroying the temple and raising it again in three days. And even concerning that point, no witnesses spoke for the defense, and neither was Jesus asked to explain his intended meaning.*

[184:5.7] *The only point the court could have consistently judged him on was that of blasphemy, and that would have rested entirely on his own testimony. Even concerning blasphemy, they failed to cast a formal ballot for the death sentence.*

[184:5.8] *And now they presumed to formulate three charges, with which to go before Pilate, on which no witnesses had been heard, and which were agreed upon while the accused prisoner was absent. When this was done, three of the Pharisees took their leave; they wanted to see Jesus destroyed, but they would not formulate charges against him without witnesses and in his absence.*

[184:5.9] *Jesus did not again appear before the Sanhedrist court. They did not want again to look upon his face as they sat in judgment upon his innocent life. Jesus did not know (as a man) of their formal charges until he heard them recited by Pilate.*

[184:5.10] *While Jesus was in the room with John and the guards, and while the court was in its second session, some of the women about the high priest's palace, together with their friends, came to look upon the strange prisoner, and one of them asked him, "Are you the Messiah, the Son of God?" And Jesus answered: "If I tell you, you will not believe me; and if I ask you, you will not answer." A little after six o'clock that morning, April 7, A.D. 30 (by Urantia Book date) Jesus was brought before Pilate, the Roman procurator, who governed Judea, Samaria, and Idumea under the supervision of the legatus of Syria. Jesus was taken, bound, before the Roman governor by the temple guards, and was followed by about 50 of his accusers including the Sanhedrin court (principally Sadduceans), Judas Iscariot, and the high priest, Caiaphas. The Apostle John followed. Annas did not appear before Pilate.*

Jesus and his accusers gathered in front of Pilate's judgment hall. The Roman governor came out and addressed the group, asking: [185:2.1] *"What accusation do you bring against this fellow?"* The Sadducees and counselors had taken it upon themselves to get rid of Jesus and were determined to ask Pilate to confirm the death sentence to be pronounced upon Jesus without stating any definite charges. The spokesman for the Sanhedrist court answered Pilate: *"If this man were not an evildoer, we should not have delivered him up to you."*

When Pilate saw that the Sanhedrists were leery of stating their charges against Jesus, although he knew they had been up all night deliberating as to his guilt, he answered them: [185:2.2] *"Since you have not agreed on any definite charges, why do you not take this man and pass judgment on him in accordance with your own law?"* Then the clerk of the Sanhedrin court spoke to Pilate: *"It is not lawful for us to put any man to death, and this disturber of our nation is worthy to die for the things which he has said and done. Therefore have we come before you for confirmation of this decree."*

The Sanhedrists were trying to convince the Romans to do their dirty work. I don't know what they were thinking, but to me, that made their sin greater, because they involved another soul in their wrongdoing. They were still responsible for the death of Jesus, even though someone else performed the act.

Pilate knew about Jesus' work among the Jews, and he figured the charges brought against Jesus were associated with infringement of Jewish ecclesiastical laws; so he referred the case back to their tribunal. Pilate wanted to postpone this case, but he saw that the Jewish leaders had made up their minds to go on with the matter. He knew that this day was the morning of the Passover and it was Friday, day of preparation for the Jewish Sabbath.

The Private Examination by Pilate

[185:3.1] *Pilate took Jesus and John Zebedee into a private chamber, leaving the guards outside in the hall, and requesting the prisoner to sit down, he sat down by his side and asked several questions. Pilate began his talk with Jesus by assuring him that he did not believe the first count against him: that he was a perverter of the nation and an inciter to rebellion. Then he asked, "Did you ever teach that tribute should be refused, Caesar?" Jesus, pointing to John, said, "Ask him or any other man who has heard my teaching." Then Pilate questioned John about this matter of tribute, and John testified concerning his Master's teaching and explained that Jesus and his apostles paid taxes both to Caesar and to the temple. When Pilate had questioned John, he said, "See that you tell no man that I talked with you." And John never did reveal this matter.*

[185:3.2] *Pilate then turned around to question Jesus further, saying: "And now about the third accusation against you, are you the king of the Jews?" Since there was a tone of possibly sincere inquiry in Pilate's voice, Jesus smiled on the procurator and said: "Pilate, do you ask this for yourself, or do you take this question from these others, my accusers?" Whereupon, in a tone of partial indignation, the governor answered: "Am I a Jew? Your own people and the chief priests delivered you up and asked me to sentence you to death. I question the validity of their charges and am only trying to find out for myself what you have done. Tell me, have you said that you are the king of the Jews, and have you sought to found a new kingdom?"*

[185:3.3] *Then said Jesus to Pilate: "Do you not perceive that my kingdom is not of this world? If my kingdom were of this world, surely would my disciples fight that I should not be delivered into the hands of the Jews? My presence here before you in these bonds is sufficient to show all men that my kingdom is a spiritual dominion, even the brotherhood of men who, through faith and by love, have become the sons of God. And this salvation is for the gentile as well as for the Jew."*

[185:3.4] *"Then you are a king after all?" said Pilate. And Jesus answered: "Yes, I am such a king, and my kingdom is the family of the faith sons of my Father who is in heaven. For this purpose was I born into this world, even that I should show my Father to all men and bear witness to the truth of God. And even now do I declare to you that everyone who loves the truth hears my voice."*

[185:3.5] *Then said Pilate, half in ridicule and half in sincerity, "Truth, what is truth — who knows?"*

[185:3.6] *Pilate was not able to fathom Jesus' words, nor was he able to understand the nature of his spiritual kingdom, but he was now certain that the prisoner had done nothing worthy of death. One look at Jesus, face to face, was enough to convince even Pilate that this gentle and weary, but majestic and upright, man was no wild and dangerous revolutionary who aspired to establish himself on the temporal throne of Israel. Pilate thought he understood something of what Jesus meant when he called himself a king, for he was familiar with the teachings of the Stoics, who declared that "the wise man is king." Pilate was thoroughly convinced that, instead of being a dangerous seditionmonger, Jesus was nothing more or less than a harmless visionary, an innocent fanatic.*

[185:3.7] *After questioning the Master, Pilate went back to the chief priests and the accusers of Jesus and said: "I have examined this man, and I find no fault in him. I do not think he is guilty of the charges you have made against him; I think he ought to be set free." And when the Jews heard this, they were moved with great anger, so much so that they wildly shouted that Jesus should die; and one of the*

Sanhedrists boldly stepped up by the side of Pilate, saying: "This man stirs up the people, beginning in Galilee and continuing throughout all Judea. He is a mischief-maker and an evildoer. You will long regret it if you let this wicked man go free."

[185:3.8] Pilate was hard pressed to know what to do with Jesus; therefore, when he heard them say that he began his work in Galilee, he thought to avoid the responsibility of deciding the case, at least to gain time for thought, by sending Jesus to appear before Herod, who was then in the city attending the Passover. Pilate also thought that this gesture would help to antidote some of the bitter feeling which had existed for some time between himself and Herod, due to numerous misunderstandings over matters of jurisdiction.

[185:3.9] Pilate, calling the guards, said: "This man is a Galilean. Take him forthwith to Herod, and when he has examined him, report his findings to me." And they took Jesus to Herod.

Jesus before Herod

When Herod Antipas stopped in Jerusalem, he stayed in the Maccabean palace of Herod the Great. It was here that Jesus taken by the temple guards, and he was followed by his accusers and an increasing number of people. Herod heard about Jesus for some time now and was curious about him. When Jesus stood before the wicked Idumean, on this Friday morning not for one moment did he recall Jesus as the lad many years before who had appeared before him in Sepphoris pleading for a just decision regarding money due to his father, who had been accidentally killed while at work on a public building. As far as Herod was concerned, he had never seen Jesus before. Herod had heard much about Jesus' miracles, and he hoped he could see him perform some act of wonder.

When they brought Jesus before this subordinate ruler, he was startled by his stately appearance and calm composure. For fifteen minutes, he asked Jesus questions, but the Master would not answer him. Herod ridiculed him and dared him to perform a miracle, but Jesus would not reply to his many inquiries or respond to his heckling.

After interviewing Jesus, Herod listened to the chief priest and Sadducees accusations; he heard all and more than Pilate had heard regarding the evil doings of Jesus. Finally, after being convinced Jesus would not talk or perform a miracle, Herod, after making fun of Jesus, dressed him in an old purple royal robe and sent him back to Pilate. Herod knew he had no jurisdiction over Jesus in Judea. Though he believed he would finally be rid of Jesus of Galilee, he was thankful it was Pilate who had the responsibility for putting him to death. Herod had never fully recovered from the fear that cursed him as the result of putting John the Baptist to death.

These final moments in the trial of Jesus are so important; I feel it necessary to quote so that the reader can receive the full impact.

[185:5.1] When the guards had brought Jesus back to Pilate, he went out on the front steps of the praetorium, where his judgment seat had been placed, and calling together the chief priests and Sanhedrists, said to them: "You brought this man before me with charges that he perverts the people, forbids the payment of taxes, and claims to be king of the Jews. I have examined him and fail to find him guilty of these charges. In fact, I find no fault in him. Then I sent him to Herod, and the tetrarch must have reached the same conclusion since he has sent him back to us. Certainly, nothing worthy of death has been done by this man. If you still think he needs to be disciplined, I am willing to chastise him before I release him."

[185:5.2] Just as the Jews were about to engage in shouting their protests against the release of Jesus, a vast crowd came marching up to the praetorium for the purpose of asking Pilate for the release of a prisoner in honor of the Passover feast. For some time it had been the custom of the Roman governors to allow the populace to choose some imprisoned or condemned man for pardon at the time of the Passover. And now that this crowd had come before him to ask for the release of a prisoner, and since Jesus had so recently been in great favor with the multitudes, it occurred to Pilate that he might possibly extricate himself from his predicament by proposing to this group that, since Jesus was now a prisoner before his judgment seat, he release to them this man of Galilee as the token of Passover good will.

[185:5.3] *As the crowd surged up on the steps of the building, Pilate heard them calling out the name of one Barabbas. Barabbas was a noted political agitator and murderous robber, the son of a priest, who had recently been apprehended in the act of robbery and murder on the Jericho road. This man was under sentence to die as soon as the Passover festivities were over.*

[185:5.4] *Pilate stood up and explained to the crowd that Jesus had been brought to him by the chief priests, who sought to have him put to death on certain charges, and that he did not think the man was worthy of death. Said Pilate: "Which, therefore, would you prefer that I release to you, this Barabbas, the murderer, or this Jesus of Galilee?" And when Pilate had thus spoken, the chief priests and the Sanhedrin councilors all shouted at the top of their voices, "Barabbas, Barabbas!" And when the people saw that the chief priests were minded to have Jesus put to death, they quickly joined in the clamor for his life while they loudly shouted for the release of Barabbas.*

[185:5.5] *A few days before this the multitude had stood in awe of Jesus, but the mob did not look up to one who, having claimed to be the Son of God, now found himself in the custody of the chief priests and the rulers and on trial before Pilate for his life. Jesus could be a hero in the eyes of the populace when he was driving the money-changers and the traders out of the temple, but not when he was a nonresisting prisoner in the hands of his enemies and on trial for his life.*

[185:5.6] *Pilate was angered at the sight of the chief priests clamoring for the pardon of a notorious murderer while they shouted for the blood of Jesus. He saw their malice and hatred and perceived their prejudice and envy. Therefore he said to them: "How could you choose the life of a murderer in preference to this man's whose worst crime is that he figuratively calls himself the king of the Jews?" But this was not a wise statement for Pilate to make. The Jews were a proud people, now subject to the Roman political yoke but hoping for the coming of a Messiah who would deliver them from gentile bondage with a great show of power and glory. They resented, more than Pilate could know, the intimation that this meek mannered teacher of strange doctrines, now under arrest and charged with crimes worthy of death, should be referred to as "the king of the Jews." They looked upon such a remark as an insult to everything which they held sacred and honorable in their national existence, and therefore did they all let loose their mighty shouts for Barabbas's release and Jesus' death.*

[185:5.7] *Pilate knew Jesus was innocent of the charges brought against him and had he been a just and courageous judge; he would have acquitted him and turned him loose. But he was afraid to defy these angry Jews, and while he hesitated to do his duty, a messenger came up and presented him with a sealed message from his wife, Claudia.*

[185:5.8] *Pilate indicated to those assembled before him that he wished to read the communication which he had just received before he proceeded further with the matter before him. When Pilate opened this letter from his wife, he read: "I pray you have nothing to do with this innocent and just man whom they call Jesus. I have suffered many things in a dream this night because of him." This note from Claudia not only greatly upset Pilate and thereby delayed the adjudication of this matter, but it unfortunately also provided considerable time in which the Jewish rulers freely circulated among the crowd and urged the people to call for the release of Barabbas and to clamor for the crucifixion of Jesus.*

[185:5.9] *Finally, Pilate addressed himself once more to the solution of the problem which confronted him, by asking the mixed assembly of Jewish rulers and the pardon-seeking crowd, "What shall I do with him who is called the king of the Jews?" And they all shouted with one accord, "Crucify him! Crucify him!" The unanimity of this demand from the mixed multitude startled and alarmed Pilate, the unjust and fear-ridden judge.*

[185:5.10] *Then once more Pilate said: "Why would you crucify this man? What evil has he done? Who will come forward to testify against him?" But when they heard Pilate speak in defense of Jesus, they only cried out all the more, "Crucify him! Crucify him!"*

[185:5.11] *Then again Pilate appealed to them regarding the release of the Passover prisoner, saying: "Once more I ask you, which of these prisoners I shall release to you at this, your Passover time?" And again the crowd shouted, "Give us Barabbas!"*

[185:5.12] *Then said Pilate: "If I release the murderer, Barabbas, what shall I do with Jesus?" And once more the multitude shouted in unison, "Crucify him! Crucify him!"*

[185:5.13.] *Pilate was terrorized by the insistent clamor of the mob, acting under the direct leadership of the chief priests and the councilors of the Sanhedrin; nevertheless, he decided upon at least one more attempt to appease the crowd and save Jesus.*

Pilate's Last Appeal

[185:6.1] *In all that is transpiring early this Friday morning before Pilate, only the enemies of Jesus are participating. His many friends either do not yet know of his night arrest and early morning trial or are in hiding lest they also be apprehended and adjudged worthy of death because they believe Jesus' teachings. In the multitude which now clamors for the Master's death are to be found only his sworn enemies and the easily led and unthinking populace.*

[185:6.2] *Pilate would make one last appeal to their pity. Being afraid to defy the clamor of this misled mob who cried for the blood of Jesus, he ordered the Jewish guards and the Roman soldiers to take Jesus and scourge him. This was in itself an unjust and illegal procedure since the Roman law provided that only those condemned to die by crucifixion should be thus subjected to scourging. The guards took Jesus into the open courtyard of the praetorium for this ordeal. Though his enemies did not witness this scourging, Pilate did, and before they had finished this wicked abuse, he directed the scourgers to desist and indicated that Jesus should be brought to him. Before the scourgers laid their knotted whips upon Jesus as he was bound to the whipping post, they again put upon him the purple robe, and plaiting a crown of thorns, they placed it upon his brow. And when they had put a reed in his hand as a mock scepter, they knelt before him and mocked him, saying, "Hail, king of the Jews!" And they spit upon him and struck him in the face with their hands. And one of them, before they returned him to Pilate, took the reed from his hand and struck him upon the head.*

[185:6.3] *Then Pilate led forth this bleeding and lacerated prisoner and, presenting him before the mixed multitude, said: "Behold the man! Again I declare to you that I find no crime in him, and having scourged him, I would release him."*

[185:6.4] *There stood Jesus of Nazareth, clothed in an old purple royal robe with a crown of thorns piercing his kindly brow. His face was bloodstained, and his form bowed down with suffering and grief. But nothing can appeal to the unfeeling hearts of those who are victims of intense emotional hatred and slaves to religious prejudice. This sight sent a mighty shudder through the realms of a vast universe, but it did not touch the hearts of those who had set their minds to effect the destruction of Jesus.*

[185:6.5] *When they had recovered from the first shock of seeing the Master's plight, they only shouted the louder and the longer, "Crucify him! Crucify him! Crucify him!"*

[185:6.6] *And now did Pilate comprehend that it was futile to appeal to their supposed feelings of pity. He stepped forward and said: "I perceive that you are determined this man shall die, but what has he done to deserve death? Who will declare his crime?"*

[185:6.7] *Then the high priest himself stepped forward and, going up to Pilate, angrily declared: "We have a sacred law, and by that law, this man ought to die because he made himself out to be the Son of God." When Pilate heard this, he was all the more afraid, not only of the Jews but recalling his wife's note and the Greek mythology of the gods coming down on earth, he now trembled at the thought of Jesus possibly being a divine personage. He waved to the crowd to hold its peace while he took Jesus by the arm and again led him inside the building that he might further examine him. Pilate was now confused by fear, bewildered by superstition, and harassed by the stubborn attitude of the mob.*

Pilate's Last Interview

[185:7.1] *As Pilate, trembling with fearful emotion, sat down by the side of Jesus, he inquired: "Where do you come from? Really, who are you? What is this they say, that you are the Son of God?"*

[185:7.2] *But Jesus could hardly answer such questions when asked by a man-fearing, weak, and vacillating judge who was so unjust as to subject him to flogging even when he had declared him innocent of all crime, and before he had been duly sentenced to die. Jesus looked Pilate straight in the face, but he did not answer him. Then said Pilate: "Do you refuse to speak to me? Do you not realize that I still have power to release you or to crucify you?" Then said Jesus: "You could have no power over me except it was permitted from above. You could exercise no authority over the Son of Man unless the Father in heaven*

allowed it. But you are not so guilty since you are ignorant of the gospel. He who betrayed me and he who delivered me to you, they have the greater sin."

[185:7.3] *This last talk with Jesus thoroughly frightened Pilate. This moral coward and judicial weakling now labored under the double weight of the superstitious fear of Jesus and mortal dread of the Jewish leaders.*

[185:7.4] *Again Pilate appeared before the crowd, saying: "I am certain this man is only a religious offender. You should take him and judge him by your law. Why should you expect that I would consent to his death because he has clashed with your traditions?"*

[185:7.5] *Pilate was just about ready to release Jesus when Caiaphas, the high priest, approached the cowardly Roman judge and, shaking an avenging finger in Pilate's face, said with angry words which the entire multitude could hear: "If you release this man, you are not Caesar's friend, and I will see that the emperor knows all." This public threat was too much for Pilate. Fear for his personal fortunes now eclipsed all other considerations, and the cowardly governor ordered Jesus brought out before the judgment seat. As the Master stood there before them, he pointed to him and tauntingly said, "Behold your king." And the Jews answered, "Away with him. Crucify him!" And then Pilate said, with much irony and sarcasm, "Shall I crucify your king?" And the Jews answered, "Yes, crucify him! We have no king but Caesar." And then did Pilate realize that there was no hope of saving Jesus since he was unwilling to defy the Jews.*

Pilate's Tragic Surrender

[185:8.1] *Here stood the Son of God incarnate as the Son of Man. He was arrested without indictment; accused without evidence; adjudged without witnesses; punished without a verdict; and now was soon to be condemned to die by an unjust judge who confessed that he could find no fault in him. If Pilate had thought to appeal to their patriotism by referring to Jesus as the "king of the Jews," he utterly failed. The Jews were not expecting any such a king. The declaration of the chief priests and the Sadducees, "We have no king but Caesar," was a shock even to the unthinking populace, but it was too late now to save Jesus even had the mob dared to espouse the Master's cause.*

[185:8.2] *Pilate was afraid of a tumult or a riot. He dared not risk having such a disturbance during Passover time in Jerusalem. He had recently received a reprimand from Caesar, and he would not risk another. The mob cheered when he ordered the release of Barabbas. Then he ordered a basin and some water, and there before the multitude he washed his hands, saying: "I am innocent of the blood of this man. You are determined that he shall die, but I have found no guilt in him. See you to it. The soldiers will lead him forth." And then the mob cheered and replied, "His blood be on us and on our children".*

Just Before the Crucifixion

Just before Jesus was crucified, the Master turned to the apostle John and said: [186:0.1] *"John, you can do no more for me. Go to my mother and bring her to see me ere I die."* When John heard his Master's request, he was reluctant to leave Jesus alone with his enemies, but he hurried off to Bethany where the entire family was assembled, waiting at the home of Martha and Mary, the sisters of Lazarus, he whom Jesus raised from the dead.

Several times during the morning of Jesus' trial, messengers of David Zebedee brought news of the progress of Jesus' trial. The family of Jesus didn't reach Bethany until just a few minutes before the arrival of John bearing the request of Jesus to see his mother before he was put to death. After John Zebedee told them all that had happened since the arrest of Jesus at midnight, Mary, his mother, went at once with John to see her oldest son. By the time Mary and John reached the city, Jesus, along with the Roman soldiers, had already reached Golgotha.

When Mary, mother of Jesus, started out to see her son, his sister Ruth refused to remain behind with the rest of the family. Ruth was determined to go with her mother, and her brother Jude went with her. The rest of Jesus' family remained in Bethany under the direction of James, one of Jesus' apostles; and almost every hour, a messenger of David Zebedee brought report on the progress of this terrible event, the crucifixion of their oldest brother, Jesus of Nazareth.

The End of Judas Iscariot

[186:1.1] *It was about half past eight o'clock this Friday morning when the hearing of Jesus before Pilate was ended and the Master was placed in the custody of the Roman soldiers who were to crucify him. As soon as the Romans took possession of Jesus, the captain of the Jewish guards marched with his men back to their temple headquarters. The chief priest and his Sanhedrist associates followed close behind the guards, going directly to their usual meeting place in the hall of hewn stone in the temple. Here they found many other members of the Sanhedrin waiting to learn what had been done with Jesus. As Caiaphas was engaged in making his report to the Sanhedrin regarding the trial and condemnation of Jesus, Judas appeared before them to claim his reward for the part he had played in his Master's arrest and sentence of death.*

[186:1.2] *All of these Jews loathed Judas; they looked upon the betrayer with only feelings of utter contempt. Throughout the trial of Jesus before Caiaphas and during his appearance before Pilate, Judas was pricked in his conscience about his traitorous conduct. And he was also beginning to become somewhat disillusioned regarding the reward he was to receive as payment for his services as Jesus' betrayer. He did not like the coolness and aloofness of the Jewish authorities; nevertheless, he expected to be liberally rewarded for his cowardly conduct. He anticipated being called before the full meeting of the Sanhedrin and there hearing himself eulogized while they conferred upon him suitable honors in token of the great service which he flattered himself he had rendered his nation. Imagine, therefore, the great surprise of this egotistic traitor when a servant of the high priest, tapping him on the shoulder, called him just outside the hall and said: "Judas, I have been appointed to pay you for the betrayal of Jesus. Here is your reward." And thus speaking, the servant of Caiaphas handed Judas a bag containing thirty pieces of silver — the current price of a good, healthy slave.*

[186:1.3] *Judas was stunned, dumfounded. He rushed back to enter the hall but was debarred by the doorkeeper. He wanted to appeal to the Sanhedrin, but they would not admit him. Judas could not believe that these rulers of the Jews would allow him to betray his friends and his Master and then offer him as a reward thirty pieces of silver. He was humiliated, disillusioned, and utterly crushed. He walked away from the temple, as it were, in a trance. He automatically dropped the money bag in his deep pocket, that same pocket wherein he had so long carried the bag containing the apostolic funds. And he wandered out through the city after the crowds who were on their way to witness the crucifixions.*

[186:1.4] *From a distance Judas saw them raise the cross piece with Jesus nailed thereon, and upon sight of this he rushed back to the temple and, forcing his way past the doorkeeper, found himself standing in the presence of the Sanhedrin, which was still in session. The betrayer was well-nigh breathless and highly distraught, but he managed to stammer out these words: "I have sinned in that I have betrayed innocent blood. You have insulted me. You have offered me as a reward for my service, money — the price of a slave. I repent that I have done this; here is your money. I want to escape the guilt of this deed."*

[186:1.5] *When the rulers of the Jews heard Judas, they scoffed at him. One of them sitting near where Judas stood, motioned that he should leave the hall and said: "Your Master has already been put to death by the Romans, and as for your guilt, what is that to us? See you to that — and begone!"*

[186:1.6] *As Judas left the Sanhedrin chamber, he removed the thirty pieces of silver from the bag and threw them broadcast over the temple floor. When the betrayer left the temple, he was almost beside himself. Judas was now passing through the experience of the realization of the true nature of sin. All the glamor, fascination, and intoxication of wrongdoing had vanished. Now the evildoer stood alone and face to face with the judgment verdict of his disillusioned and disappointed soul. Sin was bewitching and adventurous in the committing, but now must the harvest of the naked and unromantic facts be faced.*

[186:1.7] *This onetime ambassador of the kingdom of heaven on earth now walked through the streets of Jerusalem, forsaken and alone. He was desperate and his despair was absolute. On his journey through the city and outside the walls, on down into the terrible solitude of the valley of Hinnom, where he climbed up the steep rocks and, taking the girdle of his cloak, fastened one end to a small tree, tied the other about his neck, and cast himself over the precipice. Before he was dead, the knot which his nervous hands had tied gave way, and the betrayer's body was dashed to pieces as it fell on the jagged rocks.*

Chapter 13

The Burial of Jesus

Jesus stayed on the cross for about an hour after his death. The Roman soldiers would have taken him down sooner, but they were waiting for the military unit to be dispatched.

The Jewish rulers planned to throw Jesus' body into the open burial pits of Gehenna, in the southern part of Jerusalem, as was customary to dispose of crucified bodies. If the Jewish leaders had their way, Jesus' body would have been exposed to wild animals.

Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus pleaded with Pilate to give them the body of Jesus for proper burial. Often, friends of a crucified one would bribe the Roman authorities to obtain possession of the body of their interest. Joseph went to Pilate with a large sum of money, intending to pay for permission to remove Jesus' body to a private burial tomb. When Pilate heard Joseph's and Nicodemus' requests, he would not accept any money, and he quickly signed an order authorizing Joseph to go to Golgotha and take possession of the Master's body. In the meantime, a group of Jews representing the Sanhedrin had gone out to Golgotha to make sure that Jesus' body was with the Roman soldiers when they went to the public burial pits.

Joseph and Nicodemus reached Golgotha with their order right when the soldiers were taking Jesus' body down from the cross. Those who represented the Sanhedrin (the highest judicial and ecclesiastical council of the ancient Jewish nation) stood by to make certain Jesus' body was taken to the criminal burial pit. When Joseph presented Pilate's order for the Master's body to the centurion, the Jews raved in anger and sought violently to take possession of the body. The centurion ordered four soldiers to his side; with swords drawn, they stood astride the Master's body as it lay on the ground. The centurion ordered his other soldiers to leave the bodies of the two thieves and drive back the angry mob of infuriated Jews. After order was restored, the centurion read Pilate's order to the Jews. The centurion stepped aside, saying to Joseph, *"This body is yours to do with it as you see fit. I and my soldiers will stand by to see that no man interferes."* [188:1.1]

Crucified bodies were not buried in Jewish cemeteries there was a strict law against it. Joseph and Nicodemus knew this law, so they decided to bury Jesus in Joseph's new family tomb hewn out of solid rock. It was located a short distance north of where Jesus was crucified, and across the road leading to Samaria. No one had ever laid in this tomb; Joseph and Nicodemus thought it appropriate that the Master should rest there. Joseph sincerely believed that Jesus would rise from the dead, but Nicodemus was skeptical. Joseph and Nicodemus were formal members of the Sanhedrin; they kept their faith in Jesus a secret from their fellow Sanhedrists. However, some members suspected them even before they withdrew from the council. From that time on they were the most outspoken disciples of Jesus in all Jerusalem.

Around 4:30 that Friday afternoon, the burial procession for Jesus of Nazareth started from Golgotha to Joseph's tomb. The body was wrapped in a linen sheet as four men carried it, followed by the faithful women of Jesus' group from Galilee. The men who carried the body of Jesus to the tomb were Joseph, Nicodemus, John, and the Roman centurion.

They carried the body into the tomb, a chamber about ten feet square, where they hastened to prepare it for burial. The Jews did not bury their dead; they embalmed them. Joseph and Nicodemus had brought with them a significant amount of myrrh and aloes, and they wrapped the body with bandages and saturated it with these solutions. When the

embalming was complete, they tied napkins around Jesus' face, wrapped his body in a linen sheet, and reverently placed it on a shelf in the tomb. The centurion instructed his soldiers to put the doorstone before the entrance to the tomb. The soldiers then took the bodies of the thieves to Gehenna, while the others went in sorrow to Jerusalem to observe the Passover according to the laws of Moses.

The men who prepared Jesus for burial were in a considerable hurry because this was the preparation day and the Sabbath was drawing near. The men hurried back to the city, but the women lingered by the tomb until it was very dark.

While all the above was happening, the women were hiding nearby, watching all that took place, and where they laid the Master's body. The women had to hide because it was not permissible for women to be with men during burial according to Jewish law. These women did not think Jesus' body was adequately prepared for the burial rest. They decided to go back to the home of Joseph, rest over the Sabbath, then prepare spices and ointment and return on Sunday morning to properly prepare the Master's body. The women who stayed at the tomb Friday evening were Mary Magdalene, the wife of Clopas, Martha another sister of Jesus' mother, and Rebecca of Sepphoris, the woman who had wanted to marry Jesus when he was around nineteen.

Other than David Zebedee and Joseph of Arimathea, very few of Jesus' disciples believed or understood that Jesus was due to rise from the tomb on the third day. If Jesus' followers were not mindful that Jesus had promised to rise from the grave on the third day, his enemies were. The chief priests, Pharisees, and Sadducees remembered they had received reports that if his life were taken, in three days he would rise from the dead. That Friday night around midnight, after the Passover Supper, a group of Jewish leaders gathered at the home of Caiaphas, where they talked about their fear of Jesus' claim that on the third day after his death he would rise from the dead. The meeting ended when an agreement was reached that a group of Sanhedrists would visit Pilate early the next day with the official request of the Sanhedrin that Roman guards be placed at Jesus' tomb to prevent his friends from tampering with it. The Sanhedrin spokesman of this committee said to Pilate: [188:2.2] *"Sir, we remember that this deceiver, Jesus of Nazareth, said, while he was yet alive, 'After three days I will rise again.' We have, therefore, come before you to request that you issue such orders as will make the sepulchre secure against his followers, at least until after the third day. We greatly fear lest his disciples come and steal him away by night and then proclaim to the people that he has risen from the dead. If we should permit this to happen, this mistake would be far worse than to have allowed him to live."*

When Pilate heard the request of the Sanhedrists, he said: *I will give you a guard of ten soldiers. Go your way and make the tomb secure.*" [188:2.3] The Sanhedrists went back to their temple and secured ten Jewish guards, and then marched out to Joseph's tomb with these ten Jewish guards and ten Roman soldiers to watch over Jesus' tomb on the Sabbath morning. These men rolled another stone in front of the grave and set the seal of Pilate on and around these stones, lest they be disturbed without their knowledge. And these 20 remained on watch up to the hour of the resurrection while the Jews carried them their food and drink.

All throughout the Sabbath day, the disciples and apostles remained in hiding while the whole of Jerusalem discussed the death of Jesus on the cross. There were about one and a half million Jews present in Jerusalem at that time, coming from all parts of the Roman Empire and Mesopotamia. It was the start of the Passover week, and all of these pilgrims would be in the city to learn of the resurrection of Jesus and carry the news back home with them.

Late that Saturday night, John Mark called a meeting for the eleven apostles to meet secretly at his father's home. Just before midnight, they all assembled in the same upper chamber where they had their last supper with Jesus two nights before.

Mary, the mother of Jesus, along with Ruth and Jude, returned to Bethany to be with their family this Saturday evening just before sunset. David Zebedee stayed at the home of Nicodemus, and arranged for his messengers to gather early Sunday morning. The women of Galilee remained at the home of Joseph of Arimathea.

Meaning of the Death on The Cross

[188:4.1] *Although Jesus did not die this death on the cross to atone for the racial guilt of mortal man nor to provide some sort of effective approach to an otherwise offended and unforgiving God; even though the Son of Man did not offer himself as a sacrifice to appease the wrath of God and to open the way for sinful man to obtain salvation; notwithstanding that these ideas of atonement and propitiation are erroneous, nonetheless, there are significances attached to this death of Jesus on the cross which should not be overlooked. It is a fact that Urantia has become known among other neighboring inhabited planets as the "World of the Cross."*

Jesus desired to live a full mortal life in the flesh on Urantia. Death is, ordinarily, a part of life. Death is the last act in the mortal drama. In your well-meant efforts to escape the superstitious errors of the false interpretation of the meaning of the death on the cross, you should be careful not to make the great mistake of failing to perceive the true significance and the genuine import of the Master's death.

Mortal man was never the property of the archdeceivers. Jesus did not die to ransom man from the clutch of the apostate rulers and fallen princes of the spheres. The Father in heaven never conceived of such crass injustice as damning a mortal soul because of the evil-doing of his ancestors. Neither was the Master's death on the cross a sacrifice which consisted in an effort to pay God a debt which the race of mankind had come to owe him.

Before Jesus lived on earth, you might possibly have been justified in believing in such a God, but not since the Master lived and died among your fellow mortals. Moses taught the dignity and justice of a Creator God; but Jesus portrayed the love and mercy of a heavenly Father.

The animal nature—the tendency toward evil-doing—may be hereditary, but sin is not transmitted from parent to child. Sin is the act of conscious and deliberate rebellion against the Father's will and the Sons' laws by an individual will creature.

Jesus lived and died for a whole universe, not just for the races of this one world. While the mortals of the realms had salvation even before Jesus lived and died on Urantia, it is nevertheless a fact that his bestowal on this world greatly illuminated the way of salvation; his death did much to make forever plain the certainty of mortal survival after death in the flesh.

Though it is hardly proper to speak of Jesus as a sacrificer, a ransomer, or a redeemer, it is wholly correct to refer to him as a savior. He forever made the way of salvation (survival) more clear and certain; he did better and more surely show the way of salvation for all the mortals of all the worlds of the universe of Nebadon.

When once you grasp the idea of God as a true and loving Father, the only concept which Jesus ever taught, you must forthwith, in all consistency, utterly abandon all those primitive notions about God as an offended monarch, a stern and all-powerful ruler whose chief delight is to detect his subjects in wrongdoing and to see that they are adequately punished, unless some being almost equal to himself should volunteer to suffer for them, to die as a substitute and in their stead. The whole idea of ransom and atonement is incompatible

with the concept of God as it was taught and exemplified by Jesus of Nazareth. The infinite love of God is not secondary to anything in the divine nature.

All this concept of atonement and sacrificial salvation is rooted and grounded in selfishness. Jesus taught that service to one's fellows is the highest concept of the brotherhood of spirit believers. Salvation should be taken for granted by those who believe in the fatherhood of God. The believer's chief concern should not be the selfish desire for personal salvation but rather the unselfish urge to love and, therefore, serve one's fellows even as Jesus loved and served mortal men.

Neither do genuine believers trouble themselves so much about the future punishment of sin. The real believer is only concerned about present separation from God. True, wise fathers may chasten their sons, but they do all this in love and for corrective purposes. They do not punish in anger, neither do they chastise in retribution.

Even if God were the stern and legal monarch of a universe in which justice ruled supreme, he certainly would not be satisfied with the childish scheme of substituting an innocent sufferer for a guilty offender.

The great thing about the death of Jesus, as it is related to the enrichment of human experience and the enlargement of the way of salvation, is not the fact of his death, but rather the superb manner and the matchless spirit in which he met death.

This entire idea of the ransom of the atonement places salvation upon a plane of unreality; such a concept is purely philosophic. Human salvation is real; it is based on two realities which may be grasped by the creature's faith and thereby become incorporated into individual human experience: the fact of the fatherhood of God and its correlated truth, the brotherhood of man. It is true, after all, that you are to be "forgiven your debts, even as you forgive your debtors." [188:4.3-13]

Jesus died to prove to mortal man that we will continue to live if we follow in His footsteps. Those who don't live by the law of life will go to the second death mentioned in Revelation 2:11: "He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches: "He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death."

The Morontia Transit

The word morontia is used in the Urantia book to describe beings who bridge the gulf between material and spiritual. After we die, we will be resurrected in morontia form on the mansion worlds. We learn that as Jesus' body lay in Joseph's tomb, there was a great deal of activity going on in the morontia dimension, unperceivable by mortals.

At 2:45 Sunday morning, the Paradise Incarnation Commission, consisting of seven unidentified Paradise personalities, arrived on the scene where Jesus' body rested, and right away they dispersed themselves about the tomb. (Paradise is the ultimate heaven where God the Father resides.) At ten minutes before three, powerful vibrations of mingled material and morontia activity emanated from Joseph's tomb, and at two minutes past three o'clock that Sunday morning, April 9, 30 A.D., the resurrected morontia form and personality of Jesus of Nazareth came forth from the tomb.

After the resurrected spiritual body of Jesus had come forth from the burial tomb, the body of flesh in which he lived and worked for almost 36 years lay in the sepulcher undisturbed in any way; the seal of Pilate was intact, the soldiers remained on guard. The temple guards were on continuous duty; the Roman guards were changed at midnight. None of these so-called keepers who were watching over the tomb suspected that the body they guarded was now a discarded shell that had no further connection with the resurrected morontia personality of Jesus. This is the most critical reason Jesus allowed himself to die on the cross—to prove to us that life is a continuum. This is the important fact

that the Western world has ignored for 2,000 years. They replaced it with the sacrificial lamb that has no meaning in the spiritual world whatsoever.

After Jesus' resurrection, the chief archangels of the resurrection approached Gabriel and asked for the body of Jesus, and he said: [189:2.1] *"We may not participate in the morontia resurrection of the bestowal experience of Michael [Jesus] our sovereign but we would have his mortal remains put in our custody for immediate dissolution. We do not propose to employ our technique of dematerialization; we merely wish to invoke the process of the acceleration of time. It is enough that we have seen the sovereign live and die on Urantia; the hosts of heaven would be spared the memory of enduring the sight of slow decay of the human form of the Creator and Upholder of a universe. In the name of the celestial intelligences of all of Nebadon, I ask for a mandate giving me the custody of the mortal body of Jesus of Nazareth and empowering us to proceed with its immediate dissolution."*

After Gabriel had granted the chief archangel his request, he summoned numerous hosts of all orders of celestial personalities, and then with the help of the midwayers, proceeded to take possession of Jesus' physical body. The dead body of Jesus was a physical, material body and it could not be removed from the tomb as the morontia resurrection body of Jesus had been. As they were ready to move the body from the grave for its disposal of near instantaneous dissolution, the midwayers were assigned to roll the stones from the entrance of the monument. The larger of these two stones was a vast circular stone much like a millstone, and it moved in a groove, chiseled out of the rock so that it could be rolled back and forth to open and close the tomb.

When the Jewish guards and Roman soldiers saw the huge stone moving away from the entrance of the grave in the dim light of the morning, apparently by no visible means, they were overwhelmed with fear, panicked, and hastily fled. The Jewish guards fled to their homes; after a while, they went to the temple and told what had happened. The Roman soldiers fled to the fortress of Antonia and reported to the centurion what they had seen when he came on duty.

The hypocritical Jewish leaders tried to get rid of Jesus by bribing the traitorous Judas. Now they were embarrassed with a perplexing situation. Instead of punishing the guards for leaving their post, they resorted to bribing the Jewish guards and the Roman soldiers. They paid off each of these 20 men with a certain sum of money, ordering them to tell people that while they slept during the night, Jesus' disciples slipped among them and took the body away. Those Jewish leaders promised the soldiers that if Pilate found out they had accepted bribes; they would defend them.

The Christian belief in the resurrection was based on the fact the tomb was empty where Jesus lay. This was a fact, but this is not the truth about the resurrection; no one at that time ever imagined what was going on behind the scenes. Because Jesus' body was not there when the first believers arrived, they assumed the physical body had resurrected. The body was not there because the celestials been granted their request to take the body of Jesus for its special and unique dissolution it returned to the dust whence it came. Even the Christian Bible states that flesh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom, 1 Corinthians 15:50. The mortal remains of Jesus went through the same natural process of elemental disintegration as all other human bodies, only the process as far as Jesus' body was concerned greatly accelerated to the point that it was almost instantaneous. Nearly 1,000 people saw Jesus in his morontia body. There is no doubt that those who saw Jesus in his higher body remained in a state of awesome wonder for the rest of their lives.

Chapter 14

The God Within

Most of my life, I have heard of the “God within.” Some write about the God within in a roundabout way but never do I recall anyone giving a lecture or writing a book to any extent about exactly who or what is the God within. Then, while reading The Urantia Book, I found around 40 pages on the subject; I was like a hungry man devouring those pages. Studying about higher worlds is stranger than fiction. Let us peek into the peculiar and thrilling world of the God within.

[1:4.1] *The infinity of the perfection of God is such that it eternally constitutes him mystery. And the greatest of all the unfathomable mysteries of God is the phenomenon of the divine indwelling of mortal minds. The manner in which the Universal Father sojourns with the creatures of time is the most profound of all universe mysteries; the divine presence in the mind of man is the mystery of mysteries.*

[1:4.3] *When you are through down here, when your course has been run in temporary form on earth, when your trial trip in the flesh is finished, when the dust that composes the mortal tabernacle “returns to the earth whence it came”; then, it is revealed, the indwelling “Spirit shall return to God who gave it.” There sojourns within each moral being of this planet a fragment of God, a part and parcel of divinity. It is not yet yours by right of possession, but it is designedly intended to be one with you if you survive the mortal existence.*

The churches of today do not emphasize that God dwells in the mind of man; but the Bible mentions indwelling in several places. For example, 1 Corinthians 3:16 reads: “Know ye not that ye are the temple of God and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?”

According to The Urantia Book, God did not always indwell man during our ancient ancestors’ long pilgrimage to higher states of consciousness. It was after humanity reached a certain point in our evolution—free will choice and moral awareness of right and wrong—that the fragment of God came to dwell in man. With the information we have, it appears that our far-distant ancestors started out on our planet as one-celled amoeba made from the dust of the earth by beings from higher worlds called Life Carriers and given the spark of life by God.

After the Life Carriers created the seeds that made of the dust of the minerals of the earth as in Genesis 2:7, the spirit of God breathed the breath of life into that creation, and it became a living being. It may have taken millions of years for those seeds to reach the human stage; but in the mind of God, it happened instantaneously, and to us humans, we are still in the process of evolving. The human brain is barely capable of grasping how an event in the future could have already happened in the mind of God.

The Origin and Nature of the God Within

The Urantia Book is organized into 196 papers. These papers refer to the God within as the Thought Adjuster or Mystery Monitor. Although our heavenly Father is personally and forever present on Paradise, the very center of the superuniverse, He is also present in the worlds of time and space *in the minds of His countless children*. Our Father in heaven is farthest removed from us and, at the same time, most intimately near his sons and daughters on earth: a paradox. God loves us so dearly that He shares a portion of Himself with each one of us.

The papers I read so hungrily include: Paper 107; Origin and Nature of Thought Adjusters. Paper 108; Mission and Ministry of Thought Adjusters. Paper 109; Relation of Adjusters to Universe Creatures. Paper 110; Relation of Adjusters to Individual Mortals. Paper 111; The Adjuster and the Soul. Paper 112: Personality Survival.

At this stage of our evolution, most humans barely recognize that God dwells within us, but as humanity becomes more spiritually evolved, we will increasingly wake up to the indwelling God. Even now, we experience marvelous coincidences, help unasked for, unexplained physical incidents when we could have died but were barely injured, and answers to prayers. Who among us understands that our Thought Adjusters are all perfectly coordinated and in communication with all the angels?

When our ancient ancestors, earth's first true humans Andon and Fonta reached the stage where they were able to make their own decisions and not rely entirely on animal instinct, that is when the Thought Adjusters came and dwelled in their minds.

Many religions talk about the God within, but few seem to know the *purpose* of the indwelling God. According to the Urantia Book, a primary goal of the indwelling God is to co-create the soul, and to direct the soul to higher worlds, or if one prefers, heaven, and eternal life—Paradise, where the Universal Father of all resides.

The seeds of life that evolved into human beings were on this planet for millions of years before they began to form humans. Our ancient ancestors did not have souls until they became human, began to reason, made decisions for themselves, and so acquired Thought Adjusters. Together, the Thought Adjuster and the human being create the living soul. See Genesis 2:7. Creating a soul is a lifetime project which begins at an early age and continues after death. In other words, the human being and the Thought Adjuster are the parents of the soul. The soul is that part of us that has the potential to obtain eternal life.

I imagine the Higher Beings use the name Thought Adjuster for the God within because it is so close to the purpose of the indwelling God, and if we allowed it to, it would synchronize our soul to the vibration of the Universal Father. It is the Thought Adjuster that creates the unquenchable yearning for God in man. In fact, we sometimes cause significant harm to ourselves and others trying desperately to fill that void in other ways; sadly, we can misinterpret the emptiness of life without God to mean that we lack something else. For example, we yearn for a mate and when we get one, we find ourselves with the wrong person. This yearning at times causes difficulties because we don't understand it. To fill that void is to feed the soul; that is, to do God's will.

When we reach the higher worlds, our first stop will be the mansions Jesus spoke of: "In my Father's house there are many mansions." (John 14:2). For those who are hungry to learn more about life after death and preview the mansion worlds, we can continue our education by reading Papers 46 through 48 and 55 in the Urantia Book. Paper 46: The Local System Administration. Paper 47: The Seven Mansion Worlds. Paper 48: The Morontia Life. Paper 55: The Spheres of Light and Life.

Many are beginning to recognize that our experience on this planet is for our training—good and evil. Sometimes, as Jesus mentioned in the parable of Jonah, when we try to escape duty and run away to far-off enticements, we can find ourselves swallowed by the whales of selfishness, and go through darkness and death until despair brings us to seek after God and his goodness.

In the mansion worlds, we will be taught that we humans are no more than baby souls just beginning our ascendant careers, even though down here on Urantia, we may be senior citizens. On the first mansion world we shall acquire new bodies. On that world we will still be half physical; we will eat and drink, but our new bodies will produce no waste. We will experience seven of these mansion worlds, growing progressively less physical and more

spiritual until we ascend to higher dimensions where we become, progressively, even more spiritual. The entire universe is a training school for ascending souls! We will experience millennia of adventures, studies and missions before we reach Paradise, our goal, where resides the Father of All.

Long before achieving the embrace of the Father, we will have merged with our Thought Adjuster, the God within. The Thought Adjuster and the mortal soul will become one. Once we have attained this stage of our evolution, there is no more going out, as the book of Revelations proclaims. We evolve into the image of God. And we will have evolved into true Sons and Daughters of God. As I mentioned earlier, Enoch was the first Urantian to merge with the God within, as stated in the Bible. Enoch lived 365 years on earth, much longer than the average person, and he had enough time to merge with the God within.

On this planet, we have not viewed the big picture; we have limited ourselves. Before the Urantia Book was published in 1955, we could say we did not have the correct information, but today, all we need to do is seek and learn to follow the leading of the God within. We elder should be looking forward to unbelievable glory and experiences in higher dimensions.

Through the millennia since Jesus' death, we have been conditioned on this planet to accept the worst in life, a hell and damnation attitude almost everyone had embraced. Many today now realize there cannot be such a thing as hell in God's universe. Evil iniquitous souls who will not beg forgiveness and receive God's mercy are extinguished, not sent somewhere. We are beginning to understand: our Father in heaven is a loving and kind Father, as Jesus said; all we need is faith, and we will go to the higher worlds that we call heaven. We now know, with the studies social scientists are doing today, that anything we need and yearn for with conviction, we will receive, and it will manifest in the physical, even to the healing of dreadful cancers, just by being still. Psalm 46:10 states: "Be still and know that I am God." Some scientists are convinced there is energy not yet understood that saturates human bodies when they are in an altered state of consciousness, when the person being healed is in a peaceful place.

The Higher Beings responsible for bringing forth these papers make it clear that the Thought Adjuster is an undiluted and unmixed part of God. I imagine therefore one of them made the statement that God shares a portion of Himself with each of his sons and daughters on earth; yet, he remains unchanged and is the mystery of all mysteries. *The eternal Father is at one and the same time farthest removed from, and most intimately associated with, his planetary mortal sons.* [107:0.1]

The Urantia Book says of the God within, the Thought Adjusters: [107:1.3] *As to the time of their beginning separate existences apart from the absoluteness of the First Source and Center, we do not know; neither do we know their number. We know very little concerning their careers until they arrive on the planets of time to indwell human minds, but from that time on we are more or less familiar with their cosmic progressions up to and including the consummation of their triune destinies: attainment of personality by fusion with some mortal ascender, attainment of personality by fiat of the Universal Father, or liberation from the known assignments of Thought Adjusters.*

[113:7.1] *It is indeed an epoch in the career of an ascending mortal, this first awakening on the shores of the mansion world; there, for the first time, actually to see your long-loved and ever-present angelic companions of earth days; there also to become truly conscious of the identity and presence of the divine Monitor who so long indwelt your mind on earth. Such an experience constitutes a glorious awakening, a real resurrection.*

The Mission of the Thought Adjusters

It is the mission of the Thought Adjusters to be the Universal Father to the mortal creatures of time and space; this is the most basic of the divine gifts from God. Their purpose is also that of elevating the mortal minds and translating the immortal souls of men up to the celestial heights and spiritual perfection of Paradise. The Adjuster also helps in transforming the human into the divine nature of the eternal Finaliter. (To become a Finaliter, one who has sojourned with the Father in Paradise, is the ascendant soul's ultimate goal.) Fusion with the Adjuster brings forth a new type of potential perfected creature.

The Thought Adjusters took on difficult assignments when they volunteered to indwell the minds of humans on planet earth. Our Adjusters are the potential of our next order of existence, our eternal sonship with God. Our Thought Adjusters are more concerned about our future life, not so much this earthly life. They are called heavenly helpers, not earthly helpers. As a matter of fact, they are not interested in making our life easy, but in making our life reasonably difficult and rugged so our decision-making will be stimulated and multiplied.

As I had mentioned before, this earth is a schoolhouse, but it is the Adjuster's job to help us through the trials and tribulations *if we allow them*. According to the Higher Beings, our future life is more important to the Adjusters than the present life; they are preparing us for higher dimensions. They are interested in our souls reaching higher states of consciousness and learning how to control mind energy. Our ancient ancestors began their journey through the subconscious mind, now most are at the stage of conscious beings, and with the help of the God within, we will become super conscious beings.

The constantly changing emotions of joy and sorrow in our daily lives are due to the ever-changing electrochemical, environmental and psychic reactions in our bodies. The Adjusters cannot arbitrarily change our feelings of fear to a conviction of love and confidence; that is our job, our free will choice. When we execute those decisions that deliver us from the fetters of fear, we are supplying the psychic fulcrum to which the Adjuster may add the physical lever that will help lift us up to advancing enlightenment. Whatever your adversities in life, you can overcome them with the help of the God within.

When the conflict between right and wrong (not just what we think is right or wrong) is at the forefront of our minds, we can be sure the Adjuster has participated in some way. Just because we are unaware of the Adjuster's presence in us, doesn't in the least take away from its value or reality. The God within loves us and wants us to survive. The work of the God within is flawless. If we follow their lead, they will guide us to the perfection of Paradise.

After the Thought Adjusters came and indwelt the minds of humans, this distinguished us from animals. Psychologists wonder why we humans are so superior intellectually to the ape kingdom, especially since scientists have deciphered the coded message of the human genome and compared human DNA to chimpanzee DNA. There is only a slight difference between chimpanzee DNA and ours. If psychologists would read The Urantia Book, they wouldn't be puzzled—especially if they read the papers on the God within.

We are the human parent, and the Adjuster is the divine parent of our higher and advancing self, the evolving soul, and it is the soul the judges and censors discern when they decree our survival to new and higher worlds and the never-ending existence in constant communication with our faithful partner, God—the Adjuster. [108:6.7] *The Adjusters are the eternal ancestors, the divine originals, of your evolving immortal souls; they are the unceasing urge that leads man to attempt the mastery of the material and present existence in the light of the spiritual and future career. The Monitors are the prisoners of undying hope, the founts of everlasting progression. And how they do enjoy communicating with their*

subjects in more or less direct channels! How they rejoice when they can dispense with symbols and other methods of indirection and flash their messages straight to the intellects of their human partners!

You humans have begun an endless unfolding of an almost infinite panorama, a limitless expanding of never-ending, ever-widening spheres of opportunity for exhilarating service, matchless adventure, sublime uncertainty, and boundless attainment. When the clouds gather overhead, your faith should accept the fact of the presence of the indwelling Adjuster, and thus you should be able to look beyond the mists of mortal uncertainty into the clear shining of the sun of eternal righteousness on the beckoning heights of the mansion worlds of Satania.

Awarding an imperfect being with freedom is to impose upon the individual inevitable tragedy because of free will and our capacity to make mistakes. It is the nature of the Adjusters to share human suffering with us in loving and affectionate companionship.

The author of Paper 108 goes on to say that he regards the love and devotion of a Thought Adjuster as the most genuinely divine affection in all of creation. True, the love and ministry of the Creative Sons for their creations is magnificent, but the devotion of the Adjuster for the individual is Father-like. It appears the Paradise Father has reserved this form of personal contact as his creative prerogative, and there is nothing in all the universes that can compare to the love and devotion of the God within. We humans are not evolved enough to appreciate and understand the beauty of this devotion. The good news, though, is that many of us are beginning to realize the God within.

We shouldn't think of the Thought Adjusters as living in our physical brains; they are not organic parts of our bodies. It would be more accurate to envision the Thought Adjusters as indwelling the minds of man rather than thinking of them as confined to a single organ. The Adjusters are efficient ministers to the higher phases of the human mind; they are wise and experienced manipulators of the spiritual potential of the human intellect, and the Thought Adjuster resides in the super-conscious mind.

The Adjuster, the God within, is dedicated to the formidable task of directing us inward and upward to the heavenly haven of happiness. Through the years, we have been taught heaven was up there someplace, but according to The Urantia Book, heaven/God is not "up there" but is located on at the unchanging fixed center of the universe and on inner dimensions within our minds. Throughout the years, we in the Western World never considered inner dimensions. Only recently have our physicists started to study other dimensions to any great extent seriously, and they are doing pioneering work in this field. Many scientists have put forth theories that there are several different dimensions and have done mathematics to prove it. I am inclined to believe what the Egyptians called the Nether World in the Egyptian *Book of the Dead*, was their way of expressing inner worlds; they had no concepts of inner dimensions as we understand it.

The Adjusters are kind and loving leaders, our safe and sure guides through the dark times of our earthly life. They urge us steadily forward in the direction of progressive perfection. It is their wish we would love them more thoroughly and cherish them more affectionately.

The divine indwellers are mainly concerned with our spiritual preparation for the next stage of our never-ending existence; they are also genuinely interested in our material well-being and our achievements on earth. They are happy to contribute to our health, happiness, and real prosperity. They are not indifferent to our progress in all matters of earthly life that are not harmful to our future life. The Adjusters are with us through every disaster and sickness that does not destroy the mentality.

All environmental poisons significantly reduce the effort of the Adjusters to exalt our material minds. Also, the mental poisons of fear, anger, envy, jealousy, suspicion, and intolerance do great harm to one's progress.

[110:1.6] *Today you are passing through the period of the courtship of your Adjuster; and if you only prove faithful to the trust reposed in you by the divine spirit who seeks your mind and soul in eternal union, there will eventually ensue that morontia oneness, that supernal harmony, that cosmic co-ordination, that divine attunement, that celestial fusion, that never-ending blending of identity, that oneness of being which is so perfect and final that even the most experienced personalities can never segregate or recognize as separate identities the fusion partners—mortal man and divine Adjuster.*

The Adjuster and the Human Will

When the Adjusters indwell human minds, they bring with them the ideal careers for the humans they indwell. This is determined by the Higher Beings of their order who reside in a place the Higher Beings call Divinington. (I am quite sure these place names are not the real names; the real names are secret.)

We humans need not accept this divine predestination; in fact, we are at full liberty to change part or all the Adjusters' programs. Any change in our direction could change our entire destiny. It is the Adjusters' mission to bring about in us such mind changes and to make such spiritual adjustments that we might willingly and intelligently accept; under no circumstances do these divine monitors ever take advantage of us or arbitrarily influence us in our choices or decisions. They are always respectful of our human free will. A divine Adjuster will never spiritualize any human being against his or her will. Eternal survival is a gift from God which must be desired by the creatures of time. The Adjusters do not seek to control our thought but to spiritualize it to eternalize it. The success of our Adjusters in guiding us through mortal life and bringing about our survival depends not so much on what we believe, but on the decisions, we make, our determination and our steadfast faith.

The author of Paper 110 says he couldn't help but notice so many of us spend much time and thought on the trifles of living and almost completely overlook the more essential realities of everlasting importance, like those accomplishments which are concerned with the development of the relationship between ourselves and our Adjusters. One of the most important things for us humans to accomplish during our lifetime is to tune into the divinity of the indwelling Adjusters; one of the marvelous things we can achieve is a true understanding and the consecration of the eternal aims of the divine spirit who works in our minds. I quote: [110:3.4] *Co-operation with the Thought Adjusters does not entail self-torture, and self-abasement; the ideal life is one of loving service rather than an existence of fearful apprehension.*

We shouldn't confuse and misunderstand the duty and influence of the Adjusters with what is called conscience; they are not directly related. Conscience is a psychological function. It is not to be despised, but it is hardly the voice of God to the soul, which evidently the Adjusters would be if such a sound could be heard.

The Adjuster can rarely coordinate and synchronize two wholly different and diverse types of thinking as the human and divine in one lifetime. When they do succeed, those souls are conveyed directly to the mansion worlds without death; when this happens, their physical bodies are instantly and entirely disintegrated, consumed in a divine flash of light.

While we are asleep, our Adjusters try to register their creations in the higher levels of mortal minds, and some of our bizarre dreams are a sign of their failure to make contact. The Adjuster of the human being through whom communication was made for the papers of The Urantia Book, enjoyed a wide range of activity because of that human's almost

complete indifference to any outward manifestation of the Adjuster's spiritual presence. It was fortunate that this human remained consciously entirely unconcerned about the entire procedure. In fact, this person was endowed with one of the most highly experienced Adjusters. But the experiences Adjusters acquire from other associations throughout the universes do not always lead to fusion with their host.

Here is a sample of how the Thought Adjuster works. When I started reading The Urantia Book, the book was so huge I read it in sections commencing with the stories I was familiar with, for example, Adam and Eve. After reading the book for a while, I *thought* I read in the book that we humans should read the book from cover to cover, starting from the beginning; thus, we would understand the book better. And I *thought* I read that after we finished reading the book that we should try to write a book expressing in our own words our feelings and thoughts about the book. And that our fellow humans would understand the text better coming from another human. After thinking I read that in the book, I started reading it from the beginning.

Around ten years later after writing my autobiography and a self-published book on the basics of The Urantia Book, one day it dawned on me that I had been reading, studying, and researching this book for about ten years and *I don't recall seeing the passage I mentioned above*. I went to my computer and started a search in the book. I could not find anything relating to humans writing a book. Only then did I realize that perhaps my Adjuster placed those thoughts in my mind while I slept. I was so convinced that passage existed in The Urantia Book, the idea never crossed my mind it was not there.

The Seven Psychic Circles

The Higher Beings say the total of personality realization in a material world depends on the human completing or progressing through seven psychic circles of mortal potentiality. But completing all seven circles of cosmic growth does not mean we have fused with our Adjuster. The conclusion of all seven is the beginning of those steps that are necessary to Adjuster fusion.

The seven circles are not primarily intellectual, nor are they only about the soul; they have to do with personality status, mind attainment, soul growth and Adjuster attunement. It appears we start at the seventh circle and progress to the first, which is the greatest. When one develops the intellectual mind faster than the spiritual, it causes communication with the Adjuster to be difficult and dangerous. Also, overdevelopment of the spiritual tends to create an extreme and perverted interpretation of the messages of the divine indweller. In short, we need to find balance in all that we do.

The Adjuster cannot speak directly with us until we reach the first and final circle of progressive mortal achievement. This primary and last level represents the highest possible realization of mind-Adjuster relationship in the human experience before the liberation of the evolving soul from the confines of the physical body. The achievement of the first psychic circle is the closest attunement of the material mind and the Thought Adjuster possible in human experience:

[110:7.1] *The achievement of the seven cosmic circles does not equal Adjuster fusion. There are many mortals living on Urantia who have attained their circles; but fusion depends on yet other greater and more sublime spiritual achievements, upon the attainment of a final and complete attunement of the mortal will with the will of God as it is resident in the Thought Adjuster.*

When a human being has completed the circles of cosmic achievement, and further, when the final choosing of the mortal will permits the Adjuster to complete the association of human identity with the morontial soul during evolutionary and physical life, then do such

consummated liaisons of soul and Adjuster go on independently to the mansion worlds, and there is issued the mandate from Uversa which provides for the immediate fusion of the Adjuster and the morontial soul. This fusion during physical life instantly consumes the material body; the human beings who might witness such a spectacle would only observe the translating mortal disappear in chariots of fire.

Elijah is one of the figures in the *Bible* who is believed to have merged with his Adjuster. In 2 Kings 2:11, we read: “And it came to pass as they still went on, and talked, that behold, there appeared a chariot of fire, and horses of fire, and parted them both asunder, and Elijah went up by the whirlwind into heaven.”

Before mortal fusion, our Adjusters share our destiny and experience; they *are* us. After the merging of the soul, all the knowledge and value of the one becomes the possession of the other, so the two become one entity. This new being is of the eternal past, as well as the infinite future. When the evolving soul and the divine Adjuster are finally merged, each gains experiential qualities of the other, and we humans evolve into eternal beings.

We start out as God’s lowest will creatures (compared to the Higher Beings) and we develop into some of the highest administrators in all the universes; the Higher Beings call these beings Finaliters.

God loves all of us, and if we pay more attention to the God within, our lives will change for the better. The result of this merging you will find in The Urantia Book [109:1.5]: *The first stage of Adjuster evolution is attained in fusion with the surviving soul of a mortal being. Thus, while you are in nature evolving inward and upward from man to God, the Adjusters are in nature evolving outward and downward from God to man; and so will the final product of this union of divinity and humanity eternally be the son of man and the son of God.*

Summary of Urantian History

According to The Urantia Book, our planet earth's crust started to cool down around one billion years ago, when those Higher Beings gave our planet its name, Urantia. Around 600 million years ago, a scouting party was sent to our world from those higher dimensions to report on its suitability for a life experiment station. About 550 million years ago, those Higher Beings who are called Life Carriers in the higher worlds, initiated the original life pattern on our planet in its shallow seas, when the water on our earth reached a specific desired briny mixture. Around 500 million years ago, first marine, and then vegetable life were well-established on Urantia. The transition from vegetable life to animal life took place in the briny sea 450 million years ago. Eventually, some of those animals left the sea, and crawled upon the land as soon as plant life and the atmosphere on earth were able to support them.

After millions of years out of the sea, colossal land animals have developed on our planet. After millions of years, those vast land animals began to disappear and smaller primates began appearing on the scene; many millions of years later, humans began to make their appearance and eventually evolved into thinking beings. Eventually our ancient ancestors were able to make their own decisions, not relying on instinct alone. At that time the Adjusters, the God within, came and indwelt the minds of our ancient ancestors. The book of Genesis in the Bible mentions in several places that God created man. Genesis 1:27: "So God created man in his image, in the image of God created he him, male and female created he them." According to The Urantia Book, man started out like an animal but had the potential of becoming god-like. Genesis 2:7 states that God made man of the dust of the ground, breathed into his nostrils the breath of life and man became a living soul. It appears those ancient writers recorded the time that God came and indwelt the minds of man as a separate creation, but they didn't understand that was when man became a real human being. The purpose of the God within was to co-create the soul and to lead humankind to higher dimensions.

After millions of years of evolving and mutating through the animal kingdom, humanity became human. We could think for ourselves, not relying on instinct alone, and we developed the power of free will choice. This was when the higher beings in the worlds we call heaven sent the Planetary Prince and his staff to help civilize humanity. These helpers were the Anunnaki of the Sumerians (those who from heaven came), and the sons of God of Genesis 6:4 who had children by the daughters of men, who became the men of renown. Their descendants included those who attempted to build the Tower of Babel, and after thousands of years became the people of the Land of Nod, the Aryans who invaded India and started the caste system, and the Sumerians (a very advanced people). Sumerians were building megalithic structures when most of humanity was still in the hunter-gatherer stage.

After the Anunnaki or sons of God had been here for thousands of years, Lucifer rebelled, Caligastia the Planetary Prince betrayed the planet and threw in with Lucifer, and all hell broke loose. Out of 100 sons of God who came to Urantia to form the staff of the Planetary Prince, 60 rebelled along with Lucifer; these sons of God were the ones who had children with humans. When the sons of God arrived on our planet, they couldn't use the bodies they had on higher worlds. Surgeons from a higher universe came also, took plasma from Urantia's most advanced humans, and with bioengineering created bodies for the sons of God. That is why they were able to have children by humans; their bodies were made with human genes.

The History Channel is correct in asserting in their episodes of "Ancient Aliens" that extraterrestrials came to our planet thousands of years ago; in fact, the first beings came to

our planet 500,000 years ago, according to The Urantia Book and the Bible, Genesis 6:4, that the sons of God had offspring by the daughters of men.

Those Sons of God originally came to Urantia to help civilize the tribes of the earth. Sixty out of 100 of those Sons and Daughters of God rebelled along with Lucifer at the time of the Lucifer Rebellion. Before the uprising, they had been nourished by the Tree of Life, and they were able to live indefinitely on our planet; after their rebellion, the Tree of Life was taken from them by the angels of God, and they became like the mortals they came to help; they would surely die. They did the next best thing: since their bodies were created with the life plasm of human beings, they were able to reproduce with human partners.

The second group of extraterrestrials who came to our planet were Adam and Eve. Their bodies were rematerialized (I assume) by surgeons of Avalon. They came as biological up lifters for humanity. Humanity had reached its biological peak. That is why Adam and Eve were commanded to be fruitful and multiply; they were to start a new race of people. After their offspring had reached a certain number (1,000,000), they were to go out from the Garden and interbreed with the tribes of the earth until their genes spread throughout the planet and uplifted humanity.

After Adam and Eve defaulted, their offspring attempted to fulfill their parents' purpose of spreading their more advanced genes. They were taken to different continents on the midwayers' transporters (I believe). (The midwayers were able to come into our dimension through some portal with which our scientists are not yet familiar.) The descendants of Adam and Eve interbred with tribes around the world and built the large stone structures which look so much like each other. In some of those structures, they even built landing ports.

What is the Purpose of Human Life?

Ever since humanity escaped the depths of the subconscious mind and became conscious beings, we have asked ourselves, what is it all for? What is the reason for my existence? Why are we conscious of our existence? As mentioned, It appears, we evolve through three different stages as human beings: subconscious, conscious, and far into the future, we will evolve into super-conscious beings.

For years, our ancient ancestors struggled to understand these questions, and for thousands of years, beings from higher worlds have provided answers. You can see bits and pieces of the information they provided throughout the pages of ancient history; you can also see how this information has been tampered with by people who did not understand this information and who tried to fix it to their specifications. Also, in some places, the data has been purposely distorted by the power elite; for years, this was their method of control, and as a matter of fact, it still is.

The power elite don't want us to know the truth about God because the God within takes away their control. They don't want people to know about Unidentified Flying Objects (UFOs) because that tells us there are beings in the universe smarter than man and that diminishes the power elites. The truth sets us free and gives us access to the God within; truth also diminishes power elite control. In the light of the truth, those who would rule, and control humanity will have to face who they are. They are human beings no more, no less and that understanding will burst their inflated egos.

Today, the vital information presented to us in The Urantia Book has been pushed aside and ignored by academia, which is mostly controlled by the power elites who control just about everything important to man and his survival.

After studying The Urantia Book's 2,097 pages for over 15 years, and writing about it, I realize more than ever that there is no way any human or group of humans could have

written this book without help from higher sources. The spiritual information in the book is too advanced and consistent for a human to have put together. If academics studied The Urantia Book they would recognize this truth.

The Urantia Book presents the full story of the history of our planet; that is how I was able to understand the origin of the Aryan race who developed the culture of India. There is no way I could have fitted the pieces together without the help of The Urantia Book. Today, you'll find different religious sects running around like chickens with their heads cut off, trying to prove one thing or another about their religions—events that happened thousands of years ago—and how they are the inheritors. But if you don't have the actual history of your ancient ancestors, how can you be sure if your information is correct? The information we call our "Ancient History" is so fragmented, it's difficult to believe any part of it, and when you do, it leads you down the wrong path.

As we watch the world's news and ponder the different people of the world, we realize that just about every advanced country in the world is convinced that other planets in the universe are thriving with civilizations much more advanced than we are.

I believe evolution is the key to understanding everlasting life. We have been evolving for millions of years from seeds that were planted in the ocean of life. Some scientists believe the seeds of life that brought forth our type of species were planted over 400 million years ago. When Urantian life reached the human stage, that is when a significant change took place, the stage of being indwelt by the God within whereby we can, if we choose, become immortal beings.

This earth is our first step, and it is by all indications, the worst. Because of the Lucifer Rebellion, our traitorous Planetary Prince, and the default of Adam and Eve, humanity endures dire pain, suffering, and far more war and chaos than most ordinary planets endure. As we advance into higher dimensions, we will become progressively more spiritual. And we will be given the opportunity to accept immortality, but not everyone wants to do God's will or to live forever. Those who don't want to accept immortality will go to what the Bible calls the second death (Revelation 21:8). Their consciousness will be extinguished. They will exist no more. Please note that there is no such place as hell. Hell is an archaic pagan belief that somehow crept into the Bible.

It took me almost one year to read through *The Urantia Book*. At the first reading, I tried to analyze just about every page. Again, and again I concluded that I don't believe a human being of today has the wisdom or in-depth spirituality to have compiled such a complicated work. I certainly don't believe there exists a human being on this planet spiritually evolved enough. The only honest response to the Urantia Book is to study this amazing book with humility, dedication, joy and gratitude. Indeed, Urantia Book study groups exist all around the world. You can find a Urantia Book study group near you and meet friends dedicated to understanding the truth.

Those who study the Urantia Book and the Bible know that with the combined forces of the God-within and the essence of the human being, the soul is created, and the human individual hosts a living soul with immortality potential. The God within and the human are the parents of the potential immortal soul, and the body of the individual becomes the temple of Gods as the Bible refers to it. 1 Corinthians 3:11 "Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the spirit of God dwelleth in you?"

The soul that was created by the God within and the free will of the human is what survives death. This fact of soul survival is one of the main reasons Jesus allowed himself to be put to death. He wanted to prove to us that the soul survives death. If the human chooses to do God's will, three days after the death of the body, the soul will wake up in another dimension and continue its evolution. Otherwise, that soul will sleep until the group

resurrection, and after the group resurrection the soul will have another opportunity to choose to do God's will. Our living and dying are not in vain.

To teach the fact of resurrection is one of the primary purposes of Jesus' mission on our planet. The religions of human authority, as Jesus so accurately called them, have overlooked or ignored for centuries the real meaning of Jesus' death. He shared our human mortality to show us humans that we share his divine immortality. He did not have to die on the cross. He chose to die on the cross so that humans could see and understand the fact of resurrection. The pain ends and life goes on in joy.

If we decide to do God's will and go into higher worlds, we won't become perfect beings immediately after reaching those higher worlds. We will have millions of years of evolving in those higher dimensions or other worlds to become perfected beings, and, in time, we will become what the Higher Beings refer to as finaliters. As finaliters we will enter Paradise where we will see the Father. We will become super-universe administrators and helpers. If we think millions of years is a long time, we should ponder the years it took our ancestors to become Homo sapiens; but our years in the higher worlds will be much more pleasant. We who started out as God's lowest evolving will creatures will become part of God's great administration in universes yet to be created. God will value us because we will know every stage of life from the lowest to the highest. Didn't the Master Jesus teach us: the last will be first?

To the best of my ability, in this book I have shared with my fellow humans my understanding of life at this stage of my development. Using The Urantia Book as my guide, and drawing from my past experiences, I have found my purpose in life. Since that time, peace and serenity have been my constant companion. Dear Reader, it is my sincere desire that you, too, understand your origin and know your destiny.

Glossary

Adamites—The material sons and daughters, the descendants of Adams and Eves.

Adjuster—The God within.

Amadon—A human descendant of Andon and Fonta who was a loyal associate of Van advocating the rejection of Lucifer Manifesto approximately 200,000 years ago.

Andites—A human race derived from the impregnation of most of the best human strains (especially Nodites) with Adamic life plasma.

Andon—The first male human being killed during an earth earthquake at age 42.

Andonites—The first primitive human beings descended from and including Andon and Fonta.

Avalon—A local universe neighbor of Nebadon our local universe.

Avonals—One of the descending orders of revealed Paradise Sons of God, also known as Magisterial Sons.

Dalamatia—The headquarters city of the Planetary Prince, once situated on the Persian Gulf in Mesopotamia approximately 500,000 years ago. This city was named after Daligastia.

Edentia—Headquarters of the constellation for which our system belongs.

Finaliter—Father-fused beings—the humans' final goal.

Fonta—The first female human being killed during an earthquake at age 42.

Hovona—The central and divine universe.

Jerusem—Headquarters world of our local universe.

Life Carrier—Those who created the seed of life on our planet, and the spirit of God breathed the breath of life into.

Melchizedeks—An order of Higher Beings. One of them, named Machiventa, visited earth during the time of Abraham.

Midwayers—Creatures who appear on most inhabited worlds; they existed and functioned in the realm "midway" between humans and angels.

Morontia—That phase of universe reality between the material and the spiritual realms.

Mota—The wisdom of the morontia level of reality, the mindal mechanism for the comprehension of cosmic meaning and the interrelationship of the universe.

Nebadon—The name of our local universe.

Nodites—Descendants of the rebel members of the Caligastia's corporeal staff who derived their name from their leader, Nod.

Norlatiadek—The constellation to which our earth belongs.

Sangik—The Badonite family, descended from Andon and Fonta, in which the ancestors of the six colored races of Urantia were born in approximately 498,000 B.C.

Salvington—The headquarters sphere of the local universe of Nebadon, personal home of the Creator Son.

Satania—The administrative system of approximately 1,000 inhabitable planets to which our earth belongs.

Seth—The eldest son of Adam and Eve born in the second Garden and founded the Sethite priesthood.

Thought Adjusters—The God within.

Urantia—The name the higher worlds gave our planet around one billion years ago.

Uversa—The architectural and headquarters world of the seventh super universe, Orvonton, to which our universe belongs.

Additional Reading

- Finkelstein, Israel, and Silberman, Neil, Asher.** *The Bible Unearthed*, Touchstone 2002.
- Best, Robert M,** *Noah's Ark, And The Ziusudra Epic*, Enlil Press, 1999.
- Bramley, William,** *The Gods of Eden*, Avon Books, 1989, 1990.
- The Urantia Book***, The Urantia Foundation 1955. No known Author.
- Calleman. Carl Johan,** *The Mayan Calendar, and The Transformation of Consciousness*, Bear & Company 2004.
- Collins, Andrew,** *From the Ashes of Angels, The Forbidden Legacy of a Fallen Race*. Bear & Company, 1996, 2001.
- Collins, Andrew,** *Gods of Eden, Egypt ost Legacy and the Genesis of Civilization*, Bear & Company, 1998, 2002.
- DeLubic, R.A. Schwaller,** *The Temple of Man*, Copyright 1957, 1993, 1998 by Editions Dervy. Copyright 1998 by Inner Traditions International.
- Hart. Will,** *The Genesis Race*, Bear & Company, 2003.
- Kramer. Samuel Noah,** *In the World of Sumer*, Wayne State University Press, 1986.
- Malkowski, Edward F.,** *Before the Pharaohs*, Bear & company, 2006.
- Marrs, Jim** *Rule by Secrecy*, Harper Collins 2000. Rivers Press, New York, New York, 1995.
- O'Brien, Christian and Barbara** *The Genius of the Few* Turnstone Press, 1985.
- Sykes. Bryan,** *The Seven Daughters of Eve*. New York Norton & Company 2001.
- Temple, Robert, *The Sirius Mystery*, Destiny Books, 1998.
- Tolle, Eckhart,** *The Power of Now*. New World Library 1999
- Webre, Lambremont Alfred,** *Exopolitics*, Universebook, 2005, 2002, 2004.
- West, John Anthony,** *Serpent in the Sky, The High Wisdom of Ancient Egypt*,
The Theosophical Publishing House, 1993.
- Zukav Gary,** *The Dancing Wu Li Master, An Overview of the New Physics*, Bantam Books 197

Back cover

Have you ever wondered why the Egyptians, the people in the Middle East, South America, and many other places, were at one time so advanced they built megalithic structures that required advanced mathematics and vast knowledge? Who were those people? What happened to them? Who are the descendants of those people?

According to The Urantia Book, our ancestors mutated through the animal kingdom for millions of years until they reached their natural peak. The spiritual realms, about 37,000 years ago, sent Adam and Eve to serve as biologic, genetic, and spiritual up-lifters of humanity. We are told to believe Adam and Eve were the first two people on earth, but if you read the Bible's Genesis 4:8-17 carefully, according to those verses, Adam and Eve could not have been the first two people on earth.

The History Channel's "Ancient Aliens" season 1, episode 2, admits that scientists are puzzled; they wonder why humanity's brains suddenly increased three-fold around six to seven thousand years ago. But it started long before that when Adam and Eve arrived on our planet. Their bodies were rematerialized in the Garden of Eden prepared for them, and they were commanded to be fruitful and multiply, Genesis 1: 28. They were extraterrestrials. After hundreds of years, thousands upon thousands of their descendants, who were intellectual giants, went all over the globe spreading their genes and building megalithic structures, civilizing earth's tribes through discipline and cooperation. Indeed, to this day, humanity carries these genes from Adam and Eve! If you are interested in the lost history of our planet, check out this book, It received a positive review from Kirkus Reviews.

All my adult life I searched for the reason for being. After 20 years of intense research, I found what I was looking for, and I desire to share. Educated by angels in the library of angels, they directed me to the books I needed to accomplish my goal.



